

*Escape The  
Falling Away*



*David Eells*



© 2019 David Eells. All rights reserved. Permission is granted to copy and quote portions of this book, provided the context is accompanied with the copyright notice and contact details.

ISBN: 978-1-942008-24-8

First Printing – Large Print Edition – 2021

Download this book and others freely from [www.ubmbooks.com](http://www.ubmbooks.com).

Scriptures are taken from the *American Standard Version (ASV)* because of its faithfulness to the ancient manuscripts and Bible Numerics, a system designed by God for proving authenticity.

We have departed from the *ASV* only in the name Jehovah and Lord Jehovah which we replaced with Lord and Lord God, respectively. Neither represents the original YHWH but Lord is less confusing to many and we did not want this to distract from the teaching.

Numerics is a system designed into the Bible by God to prove authenticity. The Greeks and Hebrews used their letters for numbers. Therefore, the whole Bible is also written in numbers which show perfect patterns as long as the God-inspired original words are not departed from. It mathematically proves the original text and where it has been added to or taken away from. The Numeric English New Testament (NENT) is based on the numeric pattern and is quoted from when necessary.

We desire to make this book free on our part because Jesus said, “Freely you have received, freely give.” The E-book is freely available on our website [www.ubm1.org](http://www.ubm1.org). Free copies of our books are at times made available at [www.ubm1.org/free](http://www.ubm1.org/free) through the generous donations of His faithful servants. When other book houses sell our materials we do not take a percentage of profits when their rules make this possible as it is now. Other houses that we may use in the future demand the author/UBM receive at least the lowest percentage. When this happens that money will go towards free books in agreement with the Lord’s command as we have done in the past.

## **ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS**

May our Father bless those whom He used to create this book from transcriptions of David Eells' teachings:

- Andrew Gelinas who created the cover art.
- Many brothers and sisters who have worked on this book but do not wish any credit.

## Books of the Bible - Abbreviation List

### Old Testament

Gen.	Genesis
Exo.	Exodus
Lev.	Leviticus
Num.	Numbers
Deu.	Deuteronomy
Jos.	Joshua
Jdg.	Judges
Rth.	Ruth
1Sa.	1 Samuel
2Sa.	2 Samuel
1Ki.	1 Kings
2Ki.	2 Kings
1Ch.	1 Chronicles
2Ch.	2 Chronicles
Ezr.	Ezra
Neh.	Nehemiah
Est.	Esther
Job.	Job
Psa.	Psalms
Pro.	Proverbs
Ecc.	Ecclesiastes
Son.	The Song of Solomon
Isa.	Isaiah
Jer.	Jeremiah
Lam.	Lamentations
Eze.	Ezekiel
Dan.	Daniel
Hos.	Hosea
Joe.	Joel
Amo.	Amos
Oba.	Obadiah
Jon.	Jonah
Mic.	Micah
Nah.	Nahum
Hab.	Habakkuk

Zep.	Zephaniah
Hag.	Haggai
Zec.	Zechariah
Mal.	Malachi

### New Testament

Mat.	Matthew
Mar.	Mark
Luk.	Luke
Joh.	John
Act.	Acts
Rom.	Romans
1Co.	1 Corinthians
2Co.	2 Corinthians
Gal.	Galatians
Eph.	Ephesians
Php.	Philippians
Col.	Colossians
1Th.	1 Thessalonians
2Th.	2 Thessalonians
1Ti.	1 Timothy
2Ti.	2 Timothy
Tit.	Titus
Phm.	Philemon
Heb.	Hebrews
Jas.	James
1Pe.	1 Peter
2Pe.	2 Peter
1Jn.	1 John
2Jn.	2 John
3Jn.	3 John
Jud.	Jude
Rev.	Revelation

# TABLE OF CONTENTS

Preface .....	vi
Foreward.....	vii
1. Christ is the Power and Wisdom of God.....	1
2. False Teaching is a Snare .....	32
3. The Born-Again Soul .....	87
4. The Promise is to and in Christ.....	115
5. The Bondage of the Law .....	172
6. The Fruitful or Unfruitful Branch .....	230
7. God's Everlasting Covenant.....	259
8. Great Conflict and Sufferings.....	311

## PREFACE

Please note that this book is compiled from audio broadcasts given over the course of approximately two months. There is, therefore, some duplication between the chapters in order to maintain the integrity of the individual teachings.

Where a word or concept may be new to the reader, an explanation is generally provided with the first occurrence thereof.

Punctuation also has been simplified so as not to distract the reader. For example, when Scripture is quoted, brackets have been omitted where they would commonly be used to indicate that a lower case letter has been capitalized, the ellipsis has been shortened to three periods where it would commonly be a set of four to indicate that a partial text is being cited, and so forth.

We pray the Father will use this book to both edify and encourage every reader.

The Editors

## FOREWARD

***(Rev.12:3) And there was seen another sign in heaven: and behold, a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his heads seven diadems. (4) And his tail draweth the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth...*** How many times have you read this and wondered, “Why would Satan, who wants to rule in heaven, force his demons to the earth? There has to be something wrong here with what I’ve been taught. It doesn’t make sense that those ‘stars’ are the fallen angels.” Yes, there is obviously something wrong with what we’ve been taught, because we are clearly told by the Lord that “Abraham’s seed,” which Paul said we are by faith, are “as the stars of heaven” (Genesis 26:4; Exodus 32:13). And these fell away because they ignored the Word. ***(Deu.28:62) And ye shall be left few in number, whereas ye were as the stars of heaven for multitude; because thou didst not hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God.*** This is exactly as the Parable of the Sower when three people out of four who received the Word fell away.

The Bible also says, ***(Isa.9:15) ... the prophet that teacheth lies, he is the tail.*** That means false teachings are what cast down the stars out of heaven, and that means the stars have to be people: They have to be Christians who have fallen away, because who can “fall away,” except they came to God in the first place? They are “twice dead” (Jude 1:12) because they were twice born. ***(Luk.8:13) And those on the rock are they who, when they have heard, receive the word with joy; and these have no root, who for a while believe, and in time of temptation***

***fall away. (1Ti.4:1) But the Spirit saith expressly, that in later times some shall fall away from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of demons. (Gal.5:4) Ye are severed from Christ, ye who would be justified by the law; ye are fallen away from grace. These are fallen stars no longer seated with Christ in the heavenly places (Ephesians 2:6) and they are no longer blessed with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly places in Christ (Ephesians 1:3).***

This is an eternal tragedy that doesn't have to happen to you. *Escape the Falling Away* is a comprehensive look at what causes people to turn back from their quest for discipleship to Christ. It will cause you to take a closer look at your walk with the Lord, and it will encourage you to press on ***(Php.3:14) ... unto the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.***

## CHAPTER ONE

### Christ is the Power and Wisdom of God

#### *Backsliding of the Simple*

Father, we ask for Your anointing and Your wisdom to go forth today. We love You, Lord. We run after You and all that You are. Lord, many people believe that they have arrived, and that's a sad thing. There's always a goal, and the goal is Christ and Christ-likeness, and they don't know it, Lord. For that reason, "the backsliding of the simple shall slay them." Father, help us today to understand these things. We ask it in Jesus' Name, amen.

I'd like to begin our study with the verse I just quoted. **(Pro.1:32) For the *backsliding of the simple shall slay them...*** Now when Scripture talks about "falling away" (2 Thessalonians 2:3; Jude 1:24), it's talking about "backsliding" (Isaiah 57:17; Jeremiah 2:19; etc.) because both the Greek *apostasia* and the Hebrew *meshubah* have the same meaning. **(Pro.1:32) For the backsliding of the simple shall slay them, And the *careless ease of fools shall destroy them.*** We have a problem, folks. Our "hard drive" is infected with this world and its ways and its thinking, and it has to be renewed. I know many people believe that the beginning and the end of Christianity is to "just accept Jesus as your personal Savior," but that cannot be found written in the Word. What is written in the Word is "repent and believe," which means to "change your mind and believe what I say" (Matthew 21:32; Mark 1:15). Yet, too many people think they've stepped over some magic line and now they can just sit down and rest in the

flesh, but then they don't, they can't, bear fruit (Matthew 17:17-19; Luke 6:43). Without bearing fruit, we are not being "born from above" (John 3:3,7).

Let's go back to verse 20 and look at Who wrote "For the backsliding of the simple shall slay them." (**Pro.1:20**) ***Wisdom crieth aloud in the street...*** So we see Wisdom is the One speaking here. Scripture also says, (**1Co.1:24**) ... ***Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God.*** This is Jesus speaking; He is the Wisdom of God. And from John, we know that He's also the Word of God. (**Joh.1:1**) ***In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.*** Therefore the Word of God is the Wisdom of God, and the Word gives you very clear directions to seek Him, not once, not by just shaking a preacher's hand or anything like that, but to seek Him and put that Wisdom into your heart. Putting that Wisdom in your heart is what will protect and deliver you from this falling away because, as the Bible warns us, (**Psa.58:3**) ***The wicked are estranged from the womb: They go astray as soon as they are born, speaking lies.***

Let's continue reading. (**Pro.1:20**) ***Wisdom crieth aloud in the street; She uttereth her voice in the broad places*** (That's the broad road where the "many" are {Matthew 7:13}.); (**21**) ***She crieth in the chief place of concourse; At the entrance of the gates, In the city, she uttereth her words: (22) How long, ye simple ones*** (The Hebrew word there is *pthiy* and it means "foolish; silly, as in 'able to be seduced'; naive." These people are "simple" to the knowledge of God.), ***will ye love simplicity? And scoffers delight them in scoffing, And fools hate knowledge? Fools*** hate knowledge. Do you know how we know that people hate

knowledge? It's because they don't choose to seek it out; they choose the world and the worldly. They let someone just "tell them how it is," instead of seeking out their own salvation (**Php.2:12**) ...***with fear and trembling***. They would rather pay some preacher somewhere to give them the "truth." Here's the truth, (**Mat.22:14**) ***For many are called, but few chosen.***

Paul said to Timothy, (**2Ti.1:8**) ***Be not ashamed therefore of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner: but suffer hardship with the gospel according to the power of God; (9) who saved us, and called us with a holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before times eternal.*** "Who saved us, and called us": You don't get called until you get saved. This "calling" is the Greek word *klésis* and it means "invitation." We are being invited to partake of the things of the Kingdom of God, yet many people are not partaking of these, although it's written in there plainly. You can show it to them, but they've been inoculated by dead religion to not believe what is written and that's why many are the called and few are the chosen.

### *The Three Out of the Four*

Now when you go out into a field that you have planted, which is what God has done in a parable (Genesis 49:2; Isaiah 3:14,5:7,17:10,27:2; Amos 5:11; etc.), you're looking for the fruit. You're going to pick the fruit. You don't care about the plant. You plow the plant under and it goes back to the soil, just like the old body. Jesus, in the Parable of the Sower (Matthew 13:3-8,18-23; Mark 4:2-9,13-20;

Luke 8:4-15) pointed out to us four different types of people, and three of the four, when they heard the Good News, fell away, even though they were the ones, at least the last three, these were the ones who were called. **(Mar.4:14) *The sower soweth the word. (15) And these are they by the way side, where the word is sown; and when they have heard, straightway cometh Satan, and taketh away the word which hath been sown in them. (16) And these in like manner are they that are sown upon the rocky [places], who, when they have heard the word, straightway receive it with joy; (17) and they have no root in themselves, but endure for a while; then, when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, straightway they stumble. (18) And others are they that are sown among the thorns; these are they that have heard the word, (19) and the cares of the world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful. (20) And those are they that were sown upon the good ground; such as hear the word, and accept it, and bear fruit, thirtyfold, and sixtyfold, and a hundredfold.***

Again, three of the four types, when they heard the Good News, fell away. Only one bore fruit, thirty-, sixty-, and a hundred-fold. These are the true Kingdom people. So if you “love simplicity,” if you love the very simple lie that all you need to do is shake some preacher’s hand and then go sit on a pew and wait for the rapture, well, you’re one of these fools who hates knowledge. If that’s all you do, you’re hating knowledge. You need to seek out your own salvation with fear and trembling (Philippians 2:12).

***(Pro.1:23-26) Turn you at my reproof: Behold, I will pour out my spirit upon you*** (Many reject the Spirit of God, the Spirit of Wisdom. If you don't seek out your own salvation, you are rejecting the Spirit of God and the Spirit of Wisdom as it was given in the book of Acts.); ***I will make known my words unto you. (24) Because I have called, and ye have refused; I have stretched out my hand, and no man hath regarded; (25) But ye have set at nought all my counsel, And would none of my reproof: (26) I also will laugh in the day of your calamity; I will mock when your fear cometh; (27) When your fear cometh as a storm, And your calamity cometh on as a whirlwind; When distress and anguish come upon you. (28) Then will they call upon me, but I will not answer; They will seek me diligently, but they shall not find me: (29) For that they hated knowledge, And did not choose the fear of the Lord*** (The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom, is it not? {Proverbs 9:10}), ***(30) They would none of my counsel, They despised all my reproof.*** It's much simpler to let a preacher who is walking in the flesh tell you how easy it is to be in the Kingdom, and that you really don't have to lose your life as Jesus said, in order to gain your life (Matthew 16:24-25; Mark 8:34-38; Luke 9:23-24; John 12:25). "You don't really have to do that, that's the hard way, just accept Jesus as your 'personal Savior,' sit on a pew, pay your tithes and everything will be okay."

*Seek the Wisdom of God*

***(Pro.1:31) Therefore shall they eat of the fruit of their own way, And be filled with their own devic-***

**es.** Oh, the “devices” that are out there now! “Unconditional eternal security” is a particularly deadly one. It teaches that you don’t have to do anything after receiving salvation, but look at what Scripture teaches. **(Eph.2:8) For by grace have ye been saved through faith; and that not of yourselves, [it is] the gift of God; (9) not of works, that no man should glory. (10) For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus for good works, which God afore prepared that we should walk in them.** Those who don’t have “good works” are obviously not the people of God, and they will speak against “works,” although the Bible says just the opposite. The Bible says that you’re going to be judged according to your works, and it says it very clearly, over and over and over (Hebrews 11:8-30; James 2:14-26; etc.) So how do we bear the fruit of good works? First of all, we have to put goodness in our heart, because it is that Wisdom of God, the Word of God, that re-programs our hard-drive to think, walk, talk, and bear the fruit of Jesus Christ.

**(Pro.1:32) For the backsliding** (Again, the “backsliding” is the “falling-away.”) **of the simple shall slay them, And the careless ease of fools shall destroy them. (33) But whoso hearkeneth unto me shall dwell securely, And shall be quiet without fear of evil. (Pro.2:1) My son** (This is still Wisdom speaking.), **if thou wilt receive my words, And lay up my commandments with thee; (2) So as to incline thine ear unto wisdom, And apply thy heart to understanding; (3) Yea, if thou cry after discernment, And lift up thy voice for understanding...** The Bible promises that if you ask the Lord for wisdom, He will give it to you. If you ask Him for understanding, He will give it to

you. Don't be double-minded, but ask Him and seek Him (James 1:5-8). Ask Him even to put it in your heart to desire it. When I first came to the Lord, I didn't have any foundation in Scripture whatsoever, but when I started reading it, a supernatural desire fell over me to seek after wisdom, to seek after knowledge. A supernatural desire fell over me to find out about this God. I had been lied to about this God when I was in the Catholic church and I had to look in the Scriptures for myself to find out the truth. Everything else fell by the wayside as God kept on leading me through this desire for truth. Nothing else was important. All of my hobbies that I loved just moments before fell by the wayside because, suddenly, this was the important thing. If you don't have that gift, you need to ask God for that gift.

***(Pro.2:4) If thou seek her (If you seek Wisdom.) as silver, And search for her as for hid treasures: (5) Then shalt thou understand the fear of the Lord (Yes, you must have the fear of the Lord. Many people hear the Scriptures, but totally ignore what they've heard because they don't have the fear of the Lord.), And find the knowledge of God. (6) For the Lord giveth wisdom; Out of his mouth [cometh] knowledge and understanding: (7) He layeth up sound wisdom for the upright; [He is] a shield to them that walk in integrity; (8) That he may guard the paths of justice, And preserve the way of his saints. (9) Then shalt thou understand righteousness and justice, And equity, [yea,] every good path. (10) For wisdom shall enter into thy heart, And knowledge shall be pleasant unto thy soul; (11) Discretion shall watch over thee; Understanding shall keep thee: (12) To deliver thee from the way of evil, From the men***

***that speak perverse things; (13) Whoso forsaketh the paths of uprightness, To walk in the ways of darkness*** (Which is what so many people do: they get saved, and then continue to walk in the same way they've always walked, not seeking out the knowledge and wisdom of God to know even what is the Will of God.); ***(14) Who rejoice to do evil, And delight in the perverseness of evil; (15) Who are crooked in their ways, And wayward in their paths: (16) To deliver thee from the strange woman, Even from the foreigner that flattereth with her words.*** The "strange woman" is the "harlot" of Revelation 17, but that harlot is the "mother of the harlots" of the earth (Revelation 17:5).

*Only the Seed of Christ Bears the Fruit of Christ*

All of those sects that came out of the mother are also called "harlots" because every one of those denominations received their own seed, the seed that wasn't the seed of the Husband. That makes them harlots. They received their own wisdom and their own knowledge. The knowledge of the Gospel is being ignored. They've reduced it to nothing more than moralizing and there is no hope for moralizing. Those apostate preachers may get up and give a Scripture verse or two on Sunday morning, but the rest of the time, it's all their knowledge and their wisdom. Folks, there's nothing more important than the Word of God! The Word going into your heart re-creates Jesus Christ in you. He is the Word. It's the Word that does this; nothing else can do it. No moralizing can do it. You can go to some church and get moralized every Sunday and maybe even every Wednesday, if you're really diligent to go after moralizing,

but moralizing won't give you the knowledge of the Gospel. Moralizing won't give you the knowledge of how you can receive, freely, the Nature of Jesus Christ. It won't give you that confidence that this is your gift from God, that this is the reconciliation that He gave you at the Cross (Romans 5:10-11; 2 Corinthians 5:18-20; Colossians 1:21-22). He took your life, nailed it on the Cross, and gave you His Life. As Paul proclaimed, ***(Gal.2:20) I have been crucified with Christ; and it is no longer I that live, but Christ living in me: and that [life] which I now live in the flesh I live in faith, [the faith] which is in the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself up for me.*** In other words, "Now it's no longer I that live, it's Christ that lives in me."

***(Pro.2:16 ) To deliver thee from the strange woman, Even from the foreigner that flattereth with her words*** (Those apostate preachers will make it easy for you. "Come over here! We believe in 'once saved, always saved.' You won't have to do anything; just believe." They will lead you in their crooked ways and in their wayward paths.); ***(17) That forsaketh the friend of her youth*** (That's the One Who saved you in the beginning, Jesus, the One you loved in the beginning. Now they want to give you another "Jesus" and another "gospel" and another "spirit."), ***And forgetteth the covenant of her God...*** Some people don't even get to know that Covenant before they're led astray from the Bible by the teachings of men. As Jesus said to the Pharisees of His day, ***(Mar.7:6) ... Well did Isaiah prophesy of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoreth me with their lips, But their heart is far from me. (7) But in vain do they worship me, Teaching as their doctrines***

***the precepts of men. (8) Ye leave the commandment of God, and hold fast the tradition of men. (9) ... Full well do ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your tradition... (13) making void the word of God by your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things ye do.*** Folks, there's no difference in the nature of man from the time Jesus said that until now. We must repent and believe what He says; this is how we are re-programmed to walk the straight walk.

***(Pro.2:18) For her house inclineth unto death, And her paths unto the dead.*** It's true; every one of those harlots' houses "inclineth unto death." A sister I once knew shared this dream with me. She said, "I went to three doors and knocked on them, and every time, a harlot answered the door. Then the fourth time, I went and knocked on your door, and I saw you. What do you think that means?" So I asked, "How many religions have you gone to?" She answered, "Three." I told her, "Yeah, that's what I thought." ***(Pro.2:19) None that go unto her return again, Neither do they attain unto the paths of life: (20) That thou mayest walk in the way of good men, And keep the paths of the righteous. (21) For the upright shall dwell in the land...*** This is the land of God's people, the Promised Land, and each promise that we read in the Word will become ours if we are bold to stand on it. ***(Deu.11:24) Every place whereon the sole of your foot shall tread shall be yours...*** God is saying, "Every place you put your foot, I will give it to you."

God has given us this "land" that we walk in, which is this flesh that comes from the earth, in order for us to con-

quer it. And those tribes that originally inhabited the land, the Girgashites, Amorites, Canaanites, and so on (Deuteronomy 7:1-3), all represent the lusts of the “old man” that had to be conquered in order to take that land for the spiritual man, Jesus Christ, Who is **(Col.1:27) ... Christ in you, the hope of glory**. He’s growing in you like a little baby. You must feed Him; don’t feed the flesh, feed Him. **(Mat.12:46) While he (Jesus) was yet speaking to the multitudes, behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, seeking to speak to him. (47) And one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, seeking to speak to thee. (48) But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren? (49) And he stretched forth his hand towards his disciples, and said, Behold, my mother and my brethren! (50) For whosoever shall do the will of my Father who is in heaven, he is my brother, and sister, and mother.** Those who do the Will of the Father are those who are bringing forth the fruit of Jesus Christ in their life.

*Continuing on the Narrow Path*

**(Pro.2:21) For the upright shall dwell in the land, And the perfect shall remain in it.** There is a great falling-away because there is a broad road to destruction, as Jesus said. **(Mat.7:13) Enter ye in by the narrow gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many are they that enter in thereby. (14) For narrow is the gate, and straitened the way, that leadeth unto**

**life, and few are they that find it.** We don't know the narrow road unless we study the wisdom of God, which is all through the Bible. **(2Jn.1:9) Whosoever goeth onward and abideth not in the teaching of Christ, hath not God: he that abideth in the teaching, the same hath both the Father and the Son.** It's not who starts out with you; it's who continues. There are lots of people who think they know the teaching, but they're getting it second-, third-, fourth-, fifth-hand. The only way you're going to know the teaching and the wisdom of God is to study the Word and seek out the wisdom of God for yourself. Don't go into a dead church and be leavened the rest of your life. We just read that people go there and they don't ever come out! They're wasting their life, never coming to know the wisdom of God.

**(Pro.2:21) For the upright shall dwell in the land, And the perfect shall remain in it.** ("Perfect" is a word that also means "mature." Those who come into the Image of Christ are mature.) **(22) But the wicked shall be cut off from the land, And the treacherous shall be rooted out of it.** This is still talking about the same people; the wicked are the treacherous. **(Mat.22:14) For many are called, but few chosen.** You see, the wicked may start out with you, but they don't finish with you. **(1Jn.2:19) They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would have continued with us: but [they went out,] that they might be made manifest that they all are not of us.** The wicked will be cut off from the land, which is the Land of Promise. They will not know the promises, they will not live by the promises. Paul exhorted God's people to not be sons of the "handmaid," but to be sons of the "freewom-

an,” because it’s going to be proven that not everyone who is a son of Abraham is chosen. Many are called, but few are chosen. ***(Gal.4:22) For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, one by the handmaid, and one by the freewoman. (23) Howbeit the son by the handmaid is born after the flesh; but the [son] by the freewoman [is born] through promise.*** The promise is what begets you again unto Jesus Christ and everything that He is and all that He does and thinks. It’s the promise that does this. It is not being moralized; it is not joining a religion. The son of the freewoman is born through promise.

### *Born-again in Spirit, Soul, and Body*

Abraham so badly wanted Ishmael to be chosen by God, and I, too, have wanted people to be chosen by God, and I, too, have “sown seed” in both the “freewoman” and the “handmaid.” And when the sons of the handmaid begin to fall away, I cry for them, but they are manifesting who they are. ***(Gal.4:24) Which things contain an allegory: for these [women] are two covenants; one from mount Sinai, bearing children unto bondage, which is Hagar.*** If you’re born of “Hagar” then you’re in bondage. Even while you’re in religion, you can be in bondage just as the Israelites were. They were in so much bondage that when Jesus came to bring them to the higher order, they couldn’t come out of bondage. ***(25) Now this Hagar is mount Sinai in Arabia*** (It was the Israelites who went to Mount Sinai and so Paul is applying this to them, because they were in bondage and they didn’t know it.) ***and answereth to the Jerusalem that now is*** (That’s the physical Jerusalem over there in the Middle

East that's in bondage.): ***for she is in bondage with her children. (26) But the Jerusalem that is above is free, which is our mother.*** Praise the Lord! We are being born from above, first spirit, then soul, and then body. The "soul" is the mind, the will, and the emotions. Your soul has to walk after the Spirit to receive the nature of that Spirit in order for you to bear His fruit in your soul. ***(Rom.8:13) For if ye live after the flesh, ye must die; but if by the Spirit ye put to death the deeds of the body, ye shall live. (14) For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, these are sons of God.*** When you were first saved, you received a born-again spirit, but now you have to go on to bear fruit in your soul. Only if you bear the fruit, which is Christ-likeness, will you get that new body, the born-again body, like His Body.

Now those harlots' houses tell you to just "step over the line" and that all you need to be is born-again in your spirit. No, that's not enough because you haven't borne fruit yet. So how do you bear fruit? The way you bear fruit immediately is that you believe you have received. Jesus said, ***(Mar.11:24) ... All things whatsoever ye pray and ask for, believe ye received*** (The Greek word there *lambanó* is past tense in the original.) ***them, and ye shall have them.*** You walk by faith for them until you see them. Everything that the Lord offers will be nothing to the person who doesn't reach out and receive the promises by faith. They will not come to pass, and Paul tells us why. ***(Heb.4:2) ... The word of hearing did not profit them, because it was not united by faith with them that heard.*** You see, they didn't mix faith with the words.

*Falling Under the Law*

**(Gal.4:27) For it is written, Rejoice, thou barren that bearest not; Break forth and cry, thou that travailest not: For more are the children of the desolate than of her that hath the husband.** Yes, there are many called, but few chosen. **(28) Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are children of promise. (29) But as then he [that was born] after the flesh persecuted him that was born after the Spirit, so also is it now.** We know that “Ishmael,” who represents the Harlot, has persecuted “Isaac,” who is Israel, and we know that Ishmael was chosen to be the persecutor (Genesis 16:12). Although they were both born of the same father, one son turned out to be a persecutor who had no relationship with God. That’s what happens whenever people fall under law. They don’t have the grace relationship with God. There’s no difference between those Galatians and somebody who falls under any law of religion today. They had a wrong relationship with God, and if you have a wrong relationship with God, you will fall away. **(Gal.4:30) Howbeit what saith the scripture, Cast out the handmaid and her son: for the son of the handmaid shall not inherit with the son of the freewoman. (31) Wherefore, brethren, we are not children of a handmaid, but of the freewoman.** He’s trying to convince them, because the fact was that many of them were “children of the handmaid” since they had fallen back under the Law, back under a false relationship with God. He’s trying to convince them of who they are supposed to be, of Whom they can appropriate here. **(Gal.5:1) For freedom did Christ set us free:**

***stand fast therefore, and be not entangled again in a yoke of bondage.***

Returning to where we were: ***(Pro.2:21) For the upright shall dwell in the land, And the perfect shall remain in it. (22) But the wicked shall be cut off from the land, And the treacherous shall be rooted out of it.*** Yes, it's obvious that the Ishmaelites are being cut-off from the land, the Land of Promise, because they've bought a lie in their religion, as a lot of other people have in their religion. Oh, the opportunities of reading God's Word and appropriating everything that's been given unto us! That's what being "called" means (1 Thessalonians 2:12; 2Timothy 1:9; 1 Peter 5:10; etc.) It's an invitation to partake of all those promises.

### *We Must Know Him to Follow Him*

***(Pro.4:4) And he taught me, and said unto me: Let thy heart retain my words; Keep my commandments, and live.*** How are you going to continue to live? You continue to live by studying and keeping His commandments, delighting in His commandments and delighting in being pleasing unto Him. Jesus said, "He that loves me will keep my commandments" (John 14:21,23-24). You don't love Him if you're keeping the commandments of men. Men make it easy for the "old man" to live because they don't want to lose their old life (Romans 6:6; Ephesians 4:22; Colossians 3:8-10; etc.) They don't like the crucified life that comes with loving the commandments of God. ***(Pro.4:5) Get wisdom, get understanding; Forget not, neither decline from the words of my mouth; Get wisdom, get understanding. (6) For-***

**sake her not, and she will preserve thee; Love her, and she will keep thee.** That's the truth, Wisdom will keep you from falling away. **(7) Wisdom is the principal thing; [therefore] get wisdom; Yea, with all thy getting get understanding. ... (Pro.4:20) My son, attend to my words; Incline thine ear unto my sayings. (21) Let them not depart from thine eyes; Keep them in the midst of thy heart. (22) For they are life...** Some people think that eternal life is something that God put in their hand and that He can't take it back, but John tells us, **(1Jn.5:11) And the witness is this, that God gave unto us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. (12) He that hath the Son hath the life; he that hath not the Son of God hath not the life.** You see, God didn't put anything in your hand. He gave eternal life to be in the Son, and abiding in the Son is where we have eternal life.

**(Pro.4:22) For they are life unto those that find them, And health to all their flesh.** I've passed up the opportunity to die many times because I knew what the Word of God said. I knew what the Covenant was and I didn't depart from it, but I was tested. God tests us. I was tested, but I passed up my opportunities to die and continued to bear fruit. You see, if you die too soon, you don't bear the fruit you could have borne if you had continued on. Many people don't even know that we're not under the curse. They don't know that Jesus is our Passover Lamb. They don't know that the "destroyer" was meant to pass over us and take out the Egyptians (Exodus 12:23; Job 15:21; 1 Corinthians 10:10; etc.) So many people are passing up the calling! **(Pro.4:23) Keep thy heart with all diligence; For out of it are the issues of life.** Life

comes out of your heart and if you put the Wisdom of God in there, just like in the Parable of the Sower (Matthew 13:3-9,18-23; Mark 4:1-9,13-20; Luke 8:4-15), you will be re-programmed. Folks, I want you to understand that you are in danger, and the only place you have safety is in Him. If three out of every four people who hear the Gospel fall away from it, you are in danger. You need to keep on putting the Wisdom of God in your life. It will save, it will “preserve thee,” the Bible says (Proverbs 4:6).

Let’s look at the Parable of the Sower. (***Mat.13:10***) ***And the disciples came, and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables?*** He was speaking, of course, to the Jews, who had the Covenant first. Jesus said, (***Mat.15:24***) ***... I was not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.*** But remember, (***Ecc.1:9***) ***That which hath been is that which shall be; and that which hath been done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the sun.*** Once again, a Man-child is coming to the “lost sheep of the house of Israel,” only now as Paul said, (***Rom.2:28***) ***... he is not a Jew who is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision which is outward in the flesh: (29) but he is a Jew who is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.*** Now “Israel” is the ones who seek the born-again experience, not just in spirit, but in soul, and ultimately, in body. These are the ones who have the Covenant, these are the ones who are on the path, the narrow path, unto eternal life. And if you start in faith, since faith is accounted as righteousness (Genesis 15:6; Romans 4:3-22; Galatians 3:6-7; James 2:23), even when you start on that path, as

long as you stay on that path, you are assured of eternal life. Not because you have manifested it, but because you are walking by faith for it.

Notice the disciples asked, “Why do you speak to them in parables?” Of course, they wanted their brethren, the Jews, to be saved. Of course, they wanted them to understand. “Make it simple for them, Jesus, like the preachers do.” (**Mat.13:11**) **And he (Jesus) answered and said unto them, Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given.** My goodness! That sounds like it was a reprobation at the beginning of the Man-child Jesus’ ministry. Today there’s a Man-child ministry coming again, only this time to the church, and once again we have the same situation. These people are not disciples. They cannot hear. They’ve been inoculated against the truth. The Man-child speaks in parables and they cannot understand, but He won’t speak to them in any other way (Psalm 78:1-72; Matthew 13:34-35). The Bible says that He took His disciples aside, privately, and explained to them all things (Matthew 13:11; Mark 4:10). A disciple is a *mathetes*, a “learner and a follower.” Disciples are studying the Master; they’re studying the Master to walk in His steps. (**1Jn.2:6**) **He that saith he abideth in him ought himself also to walk even as he walked.** It’s not all those eminent preachers in their fancy suits; it is Jesus Who is our demonstration of true Christianity, which is to walk as He walked, exactly. It is to manifest His gifts, His works, everything. (**Heb.7:25**) **Wherefore also he is able to save to the uttermost** (The Greek word there is *pantelés* and it means “completely, forever, entirely.”) **them that draw near unto God through him, seeing he ever liveth to make inter-**

**cession for them.** But although you see that it's a free gift from God, you have to receive by faith the promise of **(Col.1:27) ... Christ in you, the hope of glory.**

**(Mat.13:12) For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have abundance...** “Whoever hath ... abundance” of what? This is speaking of “who-soever hath” understanding, “whosoever hath” fruit of what they have received. You see, if we walk in the Light, He puts more Light in our pathway. This is someone who has been given this fruit, who has been given this understanding. That is who “shall have abundance.” This is someone who is walking in Light, therefore they deserve more Light. There's no use in putting out more Light in front of someone who's not going to walk in it; they would just be condemned that much more. So God gives you a little Light, and if you walk in that, He gives you more Light. **(Pro.4:18) ... The path of the righteous is as the dawning light, That shineth more and more unto the perfect day. (Psa.119:105) Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, And light unto my path.** He gives you a lamp for your feet to show you where you stand because, if you know where you are, He can show you where to go. We need to know that. Some people are in total denial about where they stand. These people believe that they've already arrived at perfection by some magic words that they've spoken or something that they did.

**(Mat.13:12) For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that which he hath.** Jesus gave the Parable of the Talents (Matthew 25:13-30; Luke 19:11-27) about that exact situation. Two of the three servants multiplied the

talents their lord entrusted to them, but the third servant did nothing with what he was given. His lord was angry with him and said, **(Luk.19:22) ... Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, thou wicked servant. Thou knewest that I am an austere man, taking up that which I laid not down, and reaping that which I did not sow; (23) then wherefore gavest thou not my money into the bank, and I at my coming should have required it with interest? (24) And he said unto them that stood by, Take away from him the pound, and give it unto him that hath the ten pounds. (25) And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds. (26) I say unto you, that unto every one that hath shall be given; but from him that hath not, even that which he hath shall be taken away from him.** When they protested, “But he has ten!” it was because they didn’t understand God. We’re called to be disciples of Jesus Christ and to walk in His steps, but far too many people are like that third servant and they wouldn’t touch discipleship with a ten-foot pole. They’ve never even been taught that they needed, or even had an opportunity, to become a disciple. And so, because they bear no fruit and they haven’t sought wisdom, even though God has borne with them up to that point, finally He reprobates them, or in other words, “even that which he hath shall be taken away from him.”

**(Mat.13:13) Therefore speak I to them in parables; because seeing they see not, and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand.** They have physical eyes to see, but not spiritual eyes to see. How do you get spiritual eyes to see? You have to come to know the One Who wrote the Book. That’s how you get spiritual eyes

to see and that's how you get spiritual ears to hear because you'll hear only His voice, as Jesus said. **(Joh.10:27) My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me.** Sadly, many people like to leave out that last part, "they follow me."

**(Mat.13:14) And unto them is fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall in no wise understand; And seeing ye shall see, and shall in no wise perceive** (Now we know what "understanding" is, and what "perceiving" is.): **(15) For this people's heart is waxed gross...** He's talking about His people, the "lost sheep of the house of Israel," and even today, there is the "lost sheep of the house of the church" because they've lost the path. They don't know the way and they don't know that the end of that way is **(Col.1:27) ... Christ in you, the hope of glory.** They don't even know that the procession that leads up to that point is Christ increasingly growing in you like a baby in the womb. **(Mat.12:48) ... Who is my mother? and who are my brethren? (49) And he stretched forth his hand towards his disciples, and said, Behold, my mother and my brethren! (50) For whosoever shall do the will of my Father who is in heaven, he is my brother, and sister, and mother.**

**(Mat.13:15) For this people's heart is waxed gross, And their ears are dull of hearing, And their eyes they have closed; Lest haply they should perceive with their eyes, And hear with their ears, And understand with their heart...** They're afraid to know the truth. It would make them responsible to know the truth. It's easier just to "accept Jesus as your personal Savior." Now, I'm not saying that can't be a beginning, if

there was a true repentance involved, but otherwise, you're just filling a church pew and your self-deception will be revealed further down the road. **(Mat.13:15) For this people's heart is waxed gross, And their ears are dull of hearing, And their eyes they have closed; Lest haply they should perceive with their eyes, And hear with their ears, And understand with their heart, And should turn again, And I should heal them.** God really wants to heal us. He wants to heal us spiritually, physically, and every other way. These are the benefits of the Kingdom. It is for the called, the invited. **(2Ti.1:9) Who saved us, and called us with a holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before times eternal.** So when you get saved, you get invited. When you get saved in your spirit, you get a new Spirit from God, and according to what the Scripture says, you receive a "born-again spirit" and now you are invited to partake of the benefits of the Kingdom because now you are a Kingdom person (John 3:3,5). The world doesn't have this calling. This calling is not "Hey! Come to Jesus!" No, it's, "Who saved them and called them." You get saved and then you get this invitation to partake of the Kingdom. In Israel, the Israelite had the benefits of the Kingdom; the pagans did not.

**(Mat.13:16) But blessed are your eyes, for they see** (Here Jesus is talking to His disciples.); **and your ears, for they hear. (17) For verily I say unto you, that many prophets and righteous men desired to see the things which ye see...** That's why it's called the "Good News"! The Jews had to struggle to find out every jot and tittle of the Law and keep them, or else slay

a lamb. Our Lamb was slain, and the Good News is that what God gives us is a free gift! Oh, praises to His Holy Name! **(Mat.13:17) For verily I say unto you, that many prophets and righteous men desired to see the things which ye see, and saw them not; and to hear the things which ye hear, and heard them not. (18) Hear then ye the parable of the sower. (19) When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not...** Who did He just get through saying did not understand the Word? It was His people according to the Old Covenant, but the Man-child ministry that is coming is going to renew a call to the true Gospel, which many of the people have never heard. Yet many of them will choose to stick to their religion because it's easy: "Come and pay your tithes and you'll just go right into the Kingdom." Bologna! **(Mat.13:19) When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not, [then] cometh the evil [one,] and snatcheth away that which hath been sown in his heart.** (I've seen this happen when telling people what the true Good News is, and they'd rather go back to their religion because it doesn't demand anything from them.) **This is he that was sown by the way side.** (No, not much of a chance to bear any fruit there.) **(20) And he that was sown upon the rocky places, this is he that heareth the word, and straightway with joy receiveth it** (You run across these people too; they're happy because it really is good news.); **(21) yet hath he not root in himself, but endureth for a while; and when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, straightway he stumbleth.** There it is! There's the falling away. This is someone who, in the begin-

ning, received the Good News with joy, but then they didn't allow it to take deep root in self.

*Self Must Die for Christ to Grow and Bear Fruit*

When a plant's root grows down into the dirt, it actually displaces the dirt. It takes the nutrients out of that dirt and uses them to grow into an excellent plant. **(2Co.4:16) *Wherefore we faint not; but though our outward man (The outward man is just the dirt.) is decaying, yet our inward man is renewed day by day.*** But if you don't give good root to the Word of God in your life, and by faith expect it to displace what your old life was, then you're not going to bear a decent-looking plant and you're certainly not going to bear fruit. You're going to stumble because you don't have enough root to keep you in the hard times and in the persecutions and in the tribulations. You'll fall away as an unbeliever because that "wonderful life" you've been told you're going to have by accepting Jesus as your "personal Savior" doesn't come. If all you do is "accept Jesus as your personal Savior" then you're not giving up your life in order to receive your life (Matthew 10:39; Mark 8:35; Luke 17:33; John 12:25). The dirt has to give up something in order for the plant to live, otherwise, that plant jumps up quickly and even though it may look good, it dies just as quickly.

**(Mat.13:22) *And he that was sown among the thorns, this is he that heareth the word*** (So he hears the Word, he believes the word, and he accepts the Word. He's not like those others in the very beginning who did not have ears to hear.); ***and the care of the world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he be-***

**cometh unfruitful.** You know, compared to the rest of the world, most Americans are rich, and the riches of the world give people great opportunity for sin. If you have nothing and have no hope of having anything, when Jesus is given to you, you'll receive Jesus and the Good News with joy, but it may turn out to be just "jail-house religion." As soon as convicts are free and have the opportunity to go back to their sins, many of them do go back. Their sins become more important to them than the wisdom they received when they were in jail. No opportunity to sin is not a proof that you are an overcomer. The proof that you're an overcomer, folks, is that when you have the opportunity to sin, you choose God rather than sin. By the way, if you read the letters to the churches, there are no promises to anyone who is not an overcomer (Revelation 2:7,11,17,26-28; 3:5,11,21). So even if you received the Good News with joy in the beginning, you can still become (**Jud.1:12**) ... **twice-dead, plucked up by the roots.**

**(Mat.13:23) And he that was sown upon the good ground, this is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it; who verily beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some a hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.** These are people who are good ground for the seed. They give place for the seed to put forth deep roots and the "heat of the sun," or in other words, persecution, doesn't bother it. They love this new life and they bear fruit, therefore this is the only group, the only one, that is chosen out of the four. You may believe it or not, but all four of these groups are in the church and, of course, they all believe that they're saved. Now some of them are believing that they're saved for the wrong reasons and some of them are believing that they're saved for the right reasons, but none of them are doing what

they were put here to do: they are not overcoming.

When I baptize someone, I always tell them, “When you go down in this water, you’re becoming united with Christ in the likeness of His death, His burial, and His resurrection,” and the thing you’re “buried” in is the “water” of the Word (Ephesians 5:26). ***(Rom.6:4) We were buried therefore with him through baptism unto death: that like as Christ was raised from the dead through the glory of the Father, so we also might walk in newness of life. (5) For if we have become united with [him] in the likeness of his death, we shall be also [in the likeness] of his resurrection; (6) knowing this, that our old man was crucified with [him], that the body of sin might be done away, that so we should no longer be in bondage to sin; (7) for he that hath died is justified from sin.*** You go down in that water and you’re united with Him in the likeness of His death, and you also become benefitted by His resurrection. Then Paul goes on to tell us, ***(Rom.6:11) Even so reckon ye also yourselves to be dead unto sin, but alive unto God in Christ Jesus.*** That’s faith! You’re not looking in the mirror and seeing yourself, you’re looking in the mirror and seeing Jesus. ***(2Co.3:18) But we all, with unveiled face beholding as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, are transformed into the same image from glory to glory, even as from the Lord the Spirit.*** That’s the Gospel!

### *The “Called-Out Ones”*

Keep your eyes on the Gospel, the Good News, the Promise that begets you unto God. Keep your eyes on that and

get your eyes off the things of the world and the distractions of the world and the persecution of the world and the lures of the deceitfulness of riches. Are you spending time with Jesus? Or are you loving the world? If you spend all your time with the world and you are distracted from the wisdom of God, you don't love Him, and you won't last, either, because you are not taking root. The Greek word for "disciple" is *mathétés* and it means "a learner; a pupil, a follower of Christ who learns the doctrines of Scripture and the lifestyle they require." You must repent and believe and become a disciple of Jesus. If you spend your time as a student of what He is and what He expects of us and What He has given us as a free gift from God, it's just awesome!

People who study the Word for themselves, people who don't trust in any man, will outgrow those people around them who started in the Kingdom at the same time but had no interest in putting the seed in their heart. In the Parable of the Sower, the Seed, which is the Word of God, was put into the heart of man. Those who gave it good ground bore fruit, and this parable is true for us today. There is a falling-away of those who have been God's people because, even now, they have no heart for the truth. They think they've gotten all they needed from their legalistic religion, and that that's all they need. Wrong! There's only one Seed, the Seed of the Word, that can bring forth the fruit of Jesus Christ. The seed of man's religion will not bring forth the fruit of Jesus Christ. As a matter of fact, instead of looking like Jesus Christ, those people begin to look like their preacher because each seed brings forth after its own kind (Genesis 1:11-12). There's only one Seed that can bring forth the life and the nature of Jesus Christ, and that is the Word of God. He is the Word made flesh. **(Joh.1:1) In the**

***beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.*** And it is the Word, it is the Wisdom of God, that causes us to be able to partake of all the benefits of the Kingdom of God.

***(Mat.13:40) As therefore the tares are gathered up...*** Now you know what tares are, they're weeds, and in this case, they grew together with the wheat. And it can be hard to tell the difference between the tares and the wheat, that is, up until it comes to the time of bearing fruit. You may claim, "Hey, I've got fruit!" Well, do you look like Jesus Christ? Are you walking in His steps? Do you believe in His ministry today, or have you thrown all that out the window like your religion did? No, you're not walking in His steps unless you're walking in His steps. He hasn't changed. It was an eternal Gospel when He gave it, but men have changed it. Men have glorified men and religion rather than Christ. It's the same thing that happened to Jesus. None of the denominations of His time, not a single one, accepted Him. The denominations of Judaism were jealous of Jesus and killed Him. Those people who did accept Him had to leave their denominations. That's why He called them the "church"; it was because they "came out from among them" and followed Him (Isaiah 52:11; 2 Corinthians 6:17; Revelation 18:4). Today, the people who "come out from among them" and follow Him, these are the disciples and they are the Church, the *ekklésia*, "the called-out ones." Today, if you come out and you receive the life of Christ, the denominations of Christianity will persecute you, too. They don't like Jesus. They are, whether they know it or not, tares and haters of the true God, ***(Mat.13:40) ... therefore the tares are gathered up and burned with fire; so shall it be in the end of the world.***

***(Mat.13:41) The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom*** (In other words, a “falling away.”) ***all things that cause stumbling, and them that do iniquity.*** There are many out there who cause stumbling because they don’t follow the Lord or have His same heart for the people. There are many who cause “stumbling” and “that do iniquity.” They don’t know that the Gospel was meant to deliver us from iniquity and they don’t understand that the Blood washes us clean from iniquity. ***(1Jn.1:7) ... If we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus his Son cleanseth us from all sin.***

***(Mat.13:42) And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth.*** Oh, yes, there is a “furnace of fire” coming! ***(43) Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. He that hath ears, let him hear.*** You see, God is not only sanctifying individuals, He’s sanctifying a body. The workers wanted to root-up the tares, but He said, “No, let them grow together until the harvest lest you root-up the wheat with the tares.” So He lets them grow together, but in the time of the end, He plucks up the tares first and gathers them together to burn them. And then the “wheat” shines forth in the Kingdom of their Father, because God has sanctified a body, which is what the Lord is doing now. He’s sanctifying a body of people. He is now, more than ever that I’ve seen, separating away from the Body those people who continue in their sins. He does not want leaven to leaven the whole lump (Romans 11:16; 1 Corinthians 5:6; Galatians 5:9). He is doing this now, and He will be doing this up until the

physical end. He wants a holy Body. He doesn't want people in the Body who will pervert you when you come into the Kingdom. He doesn't want people in the body who will not tell you the truth when you come into the Kingdom. They immediately speak lies to you about Who He is and what He does and what He expects of you (Psalm 58:3; 1 Kings 13:18; Matthew 24:24; Acts 20:30; 1 Timothy 4:2; etc.) The Lord is plucking them up by the roots because they are "twice dead" (Jude 1:12).

Father, we ask You, in Jesus' Name, that You would grant us understanding of what You have called "repent and believe" and not the pablum that is fed to people in the churches, Lord. We ask, Lord, that you give us an understanding of the urgent necessity of repenting and believing only what You say, because it's the only way of life. What you say is the only way of safety and preservation that You give to those who seek out Wisdom. We thank You for this, in Jesus' Name. Amen.

## CHAPTER TWO

### False Teaching is a Snare

*Who is “All Israel”?*

Father, please grant us grace today to understand Your Will, grace to be motivated, grace to be disciples of Christ and not just what we’ve loosely called “Christians.” Help us to be “learners and followers,” which is the meaning of “disciple,” and Lord, let us follow You, because we know if we do that, we will hear Your Voice and we will not fall away. Thank You, Father, in the Name of Jesus, amen.

In the previous chapter, we discovered from the Parable of the Sower that three out of every four people who hear the Gospel will fall away from it. And we discovered that even though three of those four are genuinely saved in the beginning, two of those three will fall away from the Gospel, so there is only one out of the four who bears fruit thirty-, sixty-, and a hundred-fold.

Now I’d like to give thought to another parable in Scripture about the falling away, but let me just give you a little overview first so that you don’t miss something that’s very important. It has to do with being in the “Olive Tree” of faithful and true Israel (Romans 11). When Jesus came along and preached the New Covenant, there was a remnant of Israel that listened and heard and actually stayed in their Olive Tree. They were the “branches” that stayed in their Olive Tree. The rest were broken off because of unbelief but when that happened, when the remainder of the Jews turned away, then the Lord turned to the Gentiles. They came in through their faith and were “grafted” into

the Olive Tree. Then the parable jumps to the very end-times, when everything is reversed. That's because in the end-times, the Gentiles have the Covenant but the Jews don't. The Gentiles who are in the Olive Tree are believers. I'm not talking about believing in Jesus Christ, I'm talking about believing enough to obey Him and bear fruit, exactly as we saw in the Parable of the Sower. Folks, we've come to the end-times and we're coming to the place of a great falling away, a reprobation of those who do not bear fruit. Faith without works is dead (James 2:17). In the end-times, things are turned around because the fullness of the Gentiles has come in and after that, God reprobates the rest of the Gentiles, but this is not a smooth, clean cut-off line drawn; there's a little overlap on both sides. And then, finally, a last remnant of Israel comes in to the Olive Tree that God calls "all Israel" (Romans 11:26). This is the Olive Tree. It's not the people who fell away, it's not the people who never heard, it's not the people who are Jews only in the flesh. This is the Olive Tree and only those who are in the Olive Tree are called "all Israel."

As apostle Paul tells us, all those in the Olive Tree who are born from above are Jews. Whether they are natural Gentiles or natural Jews, they are Jews if they are believers in Jesus Christ. **(Rom.2:28) For he is not a Jew who is one outwardly** (No, not according to the New Covenant, they're not. In the world, yes, but not according to the Covenant.); **neither is that circumcision which is outward in the flesh: (29) but he is a Jew who is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart** (So if you are an outward Jew but have a "circumcised" heart, then you are still a Jew in the New Testament.), **in the spirit; not in the letter, whose praise is not of men**

**but of God.** He explains this again another way further on down. **(Rom.9:8) That is, it is not the children of the flesh that are children of God** (We're not talking about Abraham's seed in the natural because, as we just saw, it is not his children in the flesh that are the children of God.); **but the children of the promise are reckoned for a seed.** "The children of the promise" are all those who receive the promise of the New Covenant in all its fullness. I have to admit that most Christians don't know what the New Covenant is about, nor do they know what the real Gospel is about. It's very important to seek out the truth for yourself, folks. The devil is there ready to deceive all those who don't love the truth. They don't love the truth, therefore they don't go searching for it and, of course, these are the multitude of people who will all fall away. **(Mat.22:14) For many are called, but few chosen.**

Paul continues, **(Rom.9:25) As he saith also in Hosea, I will call that my people, which was not my people** (That would have been the Gentiles, obviously.); **And her beloved, that was not beloved.** (And that would have been the New Testament Gentile church, because they were not the people of God.) **(26) And it shall be, [that] in the place where it was said unto them, Ye are not my people, There shall they be called sons of the living God.** The Jews didn't believe that they could be sons of God. It was very hard for them to accept what Jesus had to say about that, but they were not accounted as believers until they believed the New Covenant. **There is no Old Covenant.** It passed away in Christ, Who **(Eph.2:15) ... abolished in the flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in ordinances...**

The Bible also says, **(Gal.3:23) But before faith came, we were kept in ward under the law, shut up unto the faith which should afterwards be revealed. (24) So that the law is become our tutor [to bring us] unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith. (25) But now that faith is come, we are no longer under a tutor.** Christians who go back under that Old Covenant are breaking their New Covenant to do that, and so they will be rejected, too, as children of the handmaid and not of the free woman (Galatians 4:21-31; 5:1). That's what Paul warned about. **(Rom.9:27) And Isaiah crieth concerning Israel** (He's talking about natural Israel.), ***If the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, it is the remnant that shall be saved: (28) for the Lord will execute [his] word upon the earth, finishing it and cutting it short. (29) And, as Isaiah hath said before, Except the Lord of Sabaoth had left us a seed, We had become as Sodom, and had been made like unto Gomorrah.*** In other words, meaning that they are not born-again. Jesus told a Jew that if he wasn't born-again, he couldn't enter the Kingdom (John 3:5) and couldn't even see the Kingdom (John 3:3).

### *Accepting or Rejecting the New Covenant*

Now that we have some background, let's see what it is that causes this great falling-away. **(Rom.11:7) What then? That which Israel seeketh for, that he obtained not...** This is true. Their Covenant couldn't make perfect, therefore God found place for a New Covenant and those who didn't enter into it were lost. As Jesus said,

**(Mat.15:24) ... I was not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.** Israel had the Old Covenant, and they had to be the first to accept or reject the New Covenant; that's why He spoke only to them. **(Rom.11:7) What then? That which Israel seeketh for, that he obtained not; but the election obtained it...** The "election" is speaking of those early disciples of Jesus who were Jews chosen by God, **(Mat.22:14) For many are called, but few chosen.** The Greek word translated "election" is *eklektos*. It means "the chosen," and if you want to be chosen, you have to bear the fruit of the Word.

**(Rom.11:7) What then? That which Israel seeketh for, that he obtained not; but the election obtained it, and the rest were hardened** (Yes, and that same hardening is still coming to the spiritual, New Testament Jews, too.): **(8) according as it is written, God gave them a spirit of stupor, eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear, unto this very day. (9) And David saith, Let their table be made a snare, and a trap...** Their "table" is what they eat, and spiritually speaking, it represents their teachings. The Bible warns us that a little "leaven" will leaven the whole lump (Galatians 5:9; 1 Corinthians 5:6) and that we are to beware of the "leaven" of the Pharisees (Matthew 16:6,11-12; Mark 8:15; Luke 12:1). That leaven is still among the church in a mighty way; these people are so confused, they don't even know what Covenant they're in. **(Rom.11:9) And David saith, Let their table be made a snare, and a trap, And a stumblingblock, and a recompense unto them.** It's very true, because what they're stuck with now is nothing but false religion, since they don't have a Covenant if they don't have a sacri-

fice. How can they have a Covenant without a sacrifice? The Covenant is based on a sacrifice in the Old Testament, so all they have now is just religion, and even if they came up with some other sacrifice, God would not accept it. There's only one Sacrifice that He accepts, and it's the sacrifice of Jesus Christ.

***(Rom.11:10) Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see, And bow thou down their back always.*** Let me point out to you here that history always repeats, and that what happened with the Old Covenant people is basically happening with the New Covenant people. It's the same kind of a falling-away, the same kind of blindness. There are many people who are very religious, but they're not bearing the fruit of Jesus and His disciples, because when you bear the fruit of Jesus and His disciples, you look like them, you talk like them, and you do the things that they do. This falling-away is just like the falling-away back then, however, today Israel is a different people. Today, the Jews are those people whose circumcision is in heart, and today, these are the people who are falling away in a repetition of history. ***(Ecc.1:9) That which hath been is that which shall be; and that which hath been done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the sun. (10) Is there a thing whereof it may be said, See, this is new? it hath been long ago, in the ages which were before us.*** God just keeps repeating history so that we can know the future. The biggest prophecy of the future is history, because history tells us what the future is going to be with the people who are the people of God in that time. So now we have the Covenant and the Jews don't, and multitudes are falling away from that Covenant by many delusions and

deceptions, **(2Th.2:10) ... because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved.**

**(Rom.11:11) I say then, Did they stumble that they might fall? God forbid: but by their fall salvation [is come] unto the Gentiles, to provoke them to jealousy.** When the Jews “stumbled” and “fell,” then the rest were hardened and God turned to the Gentiles in order to provoke the natural Jews to jealousy. Hopefully, they would repent and turn to the Lord. **(12) Now if their fall is the riches of the world** (That’s because here Paul is talking about all the Gentiles around the world.), **and their loss the riches of the Gentiles; how much more their fulness? (13) But I speak to you that are Gentiles. Inasmuch then as I am an apostle of Gentiles, I glorify my ministry; (14) if by any means I may provoke to jealousy [them that are] my flesh...** He had a strong desire for the natural Jews to come into the Kingdom, but at that time, only he, the other Jewish disciples, and those Jewish people who came in at that time, were the Jewish remnant. **(Rom.11:14) If by any means I may provoke to jealousy [them that are] my flesh, and may save some of them. (Rom.11:15) For if the casting away of them [is] the reconciling of the world** (When God turned away from the Jewish people, He turned to the Gentile world to bring them into the Kingdom.), **what [shall] the receiving [of them be,] but life from the dead?** Yes, we are coming to a time when the natural Jews will be resurrected by coming into the Kingdom. They will be baptized into Christ. Praise the Lord! When we’re baptized into Christ, we accept by faith that the old man died in the water of the Word, so we’re united with Christ in His death and buri-

al. And when we come up out of the water, we accept by faith that we no longer live, but that Christ lives in us (Galatians 2:20), so we're united with Christ in His resurrection. **(Mar.16:16) He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that disbelieveth shall be condemned.**

**(Rom.11:16) And if the first-fruit is holy, so is the lump: and if the root is holy, so are the branches. (17) But if some of the branches were broken off (All those except for the elect were hardened and broken off.), and thou, being a wild olive, wast grafted in among them, and didst become partaker with them of the root of the fatness of the olive tree** (That's the Gentiles coming in.); **(18) glory not over the branches: but if thou gloriest, it is not thou that bearest the root, but the root thee. (19) Thou wilt say then, Branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in. (20) Well; by their unbelief they were broken off..** This is the great falling-away that we just read about and their "table," the teachings of their false religion, is still a snare and a trap to this day (Romans 11:9).

We've seen that the Parable of the Sower (Matthew 13:3-9,18-23; Mark 4:1-9,13-20; Luke 8:4-15) says the same thing of them. When Jesus came, there was a great falling-away of the first Covenant people, and this is a type of the Man-child ministry that's coming in our day, a ministry in whom Jesus lives by His Word and Spirit. Most of those first Covenant people had no eyes to see and no ears to hear. That's why the disciples wanted very much for Jesus to speak plainly in their "language," in other words, without parables, and He refused, because **(Luk.8:10) ... Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the**

***kingdom of God: but to the rest in parables; that seeing they may not see, and hearing they may not understand.*** It was not given to them (Matthew 13:11).

***(Rom.11:20) Well; by their unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by thy faith.*** It was their unbelief in what? It was their unbelief in the Gospel, unbelief that they no longer had to slay lambs and goats because Jesus, Himself, was the Sacrifice and that they, through their sin, were the ones who sacrificed Jesus in their own ignorance. They didn't believe these things. They didn't believe in the good news of the Gospel that Jesus spoke and the disciples spoke, therefore the first Covenant people were broken off out of their own Olive Tree because after Jesus came, they had no Covenant. And they still don't have a Covenant, even in the natural. Jews today don't have a Covenant because they don't have a sacrifice. Even if they did have a red heifer to sacrifice for the cleansing of the priesthood (Numbers 19), God would not accept it because now He has a New Covenant. ***(Heb.8:13) In that he saith, A new covenant he hath made the first old. But that which is becoming old and waxeth aged is nigh unto vanishing away.*** When God made the New Covenant, that made the Old Covenant obsolete (Luke 22:20; 2 Corinthians 3:6,5:17; Hebrews 8:8; etc.) and therefore, if you hold fast to the Old Covenant and don't come into the New Covenant, you don't have a Covenant.

***(Rom.11:20) Well*** (The Greek word there is *kalós* meaning "rightly; correctly; well enough."); ***by their unbelief they were broken off*** (And you'll be broken off, too, if you let apostate preachers bring you back under their non-existent "covenant."), ***and thou standest by thy faith.*** The thing that causes us to stand in the Olive

Tree of “all Israel” is faith, faith in the Gospel, faith in the Good News, faith in the promises. We’re the children of the promise, not of the letter, but of the promise (Galatians 4:28). The promise is what gives us new birth. The promise is what gives us faith. **(Rom.10:17) So belief [cometh] of hearing, and hearing by the word of Christ.** We become children of Abraham, but not according to the flesh. Those people, the natural Jews, are still there and they still have their promises. They still have their Promised Land. We are children according to the Spirit because of faith, the faith of Abraham. Abraham had a covenant before the Old Testament Law ever came about (Romans 4:9-11), and the Old Testament Law came in because of sin. **(Gal.3:19) What then is the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise hath been made; [and it was] ordained through angels by the hand of a mediator.** That “Seed” was Jesus Christ and everybody who abides in Him has this promise, but “thou standest by thy faith,” so if you lose faith, guess what happens to you? **(Rom.11:20) ... Be not highminded, but fear: (21) for if God spared not the natural branches, neither will he spare thee.**

If you lose faith, you lose the Covenant. Your part of the Covenant is the faith. God’s part of the Covenant is the provision. He provides all, everything you need. If you stand in faith, you have the provision. If you don’t stand in faith, you are not justified by faith, or in other words, you are not “accounted righteous,” which is what “justified” means. And since you are not accounted righteous, you do not get the benefits of the Kingdom. By way of example, if you do not believe that **(1Pe.2:24) ... by his stripes ye were**

**healed**, if you do not believe that He has already healed you, then you do not get healed. It's that way, too, with every Covenant benefit. Any benefit for which you do not have faith, you will not receive, because you're a non-believer in that regard.

### *Signs Follow Those That Believe*

I'm not trying to draw the line here about who can get in the Kingdom and who can't; I'm talking about how you miss out on the benefits of the Kingdom if you do not believe what the Scriptures say. It will be proven who is a believer because "these signs will accompany them that believe ... they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover." This is just regarding the one particular benefit of healing, which we're talking about here, but Jesus gave signs, plural. He said, ***(Mar.16:16) He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that disbelieveth shall be condemned. (17) And these signs shall accompany them that believe: in my name shall they cast out demons; they shall speak with new tongues; (18) they shall take up serpents, and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall in no wise hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover. Believers have signs.*** If you run across "believers" who don't have signs, they are not believers according to Jesus. So you see, you might have accepted Jesus, you might even have a born-again spirit, but if you're not a believer, you won't bear fruit. The fruit is the fruit of Jesus. The fruit is what the one out-of-four received in the Parable of the Sower, and that fruit put them in the Kingdom.

The faith of the modern religious system has “another Jesus” and “another gospel” and “another spirit” (2 Corinthians 11:4; Galatians 1:6-7), and that’s because men who have no faith changed the Gospel to make themselves “Christians,” but “Christian” means having the same faith that Jesus gave when He made the New Covenant. **(Heb.13:8) Jesus Christ is the same yesterday and to-day, yea and for ever.** He called it an eternal Covenant (Psalm 105:8; Jeremiah 32:40,50:5; Ezekiel 16:60; Hebrews 13:20). Those early Christians were called “Christians” because they did what Jesus did. They walked in His steps and they spoke what He spoke and they had His Spirit. That’s what the Word says and that certainly disqualifies a lot of people. So now we see why there would be such a great falling-away: It’s because many people who think they’re Christians, are not Christians. They’re not bearing the fruit of Jesus Christ. The Word is very clear, **(1Jn.2:6) He that saith he abideth in him** (This is speaking of Jesus.) **ought himself also to walk even as he** (That’s Jesus.) **walked.** And Jesus said, **(Joh.14:12) ... he that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater [works] than these shall he do; because I go unto the Father.** His disciples did do His works, and even up until today, His disciples do His works, because they have power. They are obedient and they are filled with **(Act.5:32) the Holy Spirit, Whom God hath given to them that obey Him.** If you’re not going to be obedient, why would God give you His Holy Spirit to just condemn you more? You need to repent of your sins and be filled with the Spirit of God.

**(Rom.11:21) For if God spared not the natural branches, neither will he spare thee.** We’re clearly

talking about a falling-away of those Gentiles who were “grafted into the olive tree.” The once-saved-always-saved people like to give their excuse of, “Oh, they never were really saved to begin with,” but, no, this is a falling-away, because you can’t fall away from something that you don’t have. No, they fell away. They are in the Olive Tree when the Lord sends forth His angels (**Mat.13:41**) ... **and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that cause stumbling, and them that do iniquity, (42) and shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth. (43) Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. He that hath ears, let him hear.**

**(Rom.11:21) For if God spared not the natural branches, neither will He spare thee.** So in other words, yes, you may be in the Olive Tree through faith, but you may not continue in the faith, and there are many people who do fall away from the faith. “The faith,” of course, covers a very large territory, but it’s basically the things that we were told in our New Covenant. If you fall away from these things, how can you call yourself a “Christian”? Remember, **(Rom.11:20) ... by their unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by thy faith. Be not highminded, but fear.** The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom (Job 28:28; Proverbs 1:29,2:5,9:10,15:33). Walking in the faith of the New Testament will keep you in the Olive Tree because the faith of the New Testament has power, but the “faith” of back-slidden religion has no power whatsoever. That “faith” doesn’t do the works of Jesus. That “faith” doesn’t say what He said because they’ve cut so much out of their Bible there’s hardly anything left. The

promise of the Father is **(Act.1:8) ... ye shall receive power, when the Holy Spirit is come upon you...** Back-slidden religion doesn't have power and doesn't even believe in receiving power. Back-slidden religion doesn't believe in tongues or any of the rest of those gifts (1 Corinthians 12:4-11). Such people are not Christian. "Christian" is "Christ-like."

**(Rom.11:22) Behold then the goodness and severity of God...** Oh, it is severity! Do you think that God would cut off that many of His Old Testament people, yet He would spare you as His New Testament people for doing the same thing? We need to hold fast to the things which were spoken. God pronounces a curse in the last four verses of the Book to not add to His Word or take away from His Word. **(Rev.22:18) I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, if any man shall add unto them, God shall add unto him the plagues which are written in this book: (19) and if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part from the tree of life, and out of the holy city, which are written in this book.** "Take away his part" means that this is somebody who had it but then they lost it, and so a great curse, a great falling-away, is coming.

We are about to repeat history here. The Man-child ministry is about to start, and Jesus is going to go forth once again in a body of people in whom He lives, and they are going to be reformers, just as He was. **(Rom.11:26) And so all Israel shall be saved: even as it is written, There shall come out of Zion the Deliverer; He shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob.** The "De-

liverer” is the Man-child ministry, which Isaiah called the “Redeemer” (Isaiah 59:20). The Lord is coming to reform and bring us back to the Covenant that these liars from apostate religion took us away from. Do you know that if you deny the words of the Covenant and the faith of the Covenant, you are a murderer? You spiritually kill people. Who is guilty of the blood of the saints and of the prophets? It’s the “Harlot,” the one who received the seed of man instead of the Seed of God (Matthew 23:35; Luke 11:49; Revelation 16:6,17:6,18:24). It’s the Harlot! How many people today are dead because apostate religion does not believe that Jesus delivered us from the curse, delivered us from the demons, delivered us from sickness, delivered us from sin? How many? These people have destroyed the Gospel. They’re guilty, and you’re going to see them judged in the exact same way that the leadership of Israel was judged with blindness, deafness, not being able to accept the Truth, and so on. These back-slidden preachers are going to be used as a test for those people who follow them, a test to find out who it is that loves the Truth. The truth is here; it’s in black and white, but apostate religion denies it. They’re nothing but idolaters, because you can show them the Word and still they will deny it for their own religious doctrines’ idols and their own preacher idols. God is angry with them, because He’s given them time to repent and they have not done so (Revelation 2:21). A few will repent and come into the Kingdom but, sadly, most will not. The early disciples were sad that three out of four who heard the Gospel were not holding fast to what God was giving. It’s the same today. We’re seeing a falling-away already, a great falling-away of people who do not believe the Word and refuse to obey it because of their idols.

**(Rom.11:22) Behold then the goodness and severity of God: toward them that fell, severity; but toward thee, God's goodness, if thou continue in his goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off.**

“Cut-off” means that they were in the Olive Tree, and a good many people will be cut-off even before the Tribulation comes. Apostate churches teach they're all going to be raptured away, but I can tell you the bigger part is going to be cut-off in a great falling away. **(Rom.11:23) And they also, if they continue not in their unbelief, shall be grafted in** (If the Jews don't continue in their unbelief, they can be grafted back into their own Olive Tree.): **for God is able to graft them in again.** Oh, praise God! There have always been Jews coming into the New Covenant, although some of them come only half-way into the New Covenant because they have a problem in knowing which part of which Covenant to obey. They think it's good to keep all the feasts and all the Old Testament Law because they don't understand that that's exactly what the Bible warns about. Those feasts were parables. By following the Old Testament Law, they're not keeping the parable, they're doing the parable. They don't know they're supposed to be fulfilling the parable because of the “letter.” **(2Co.3:6) Who also made us sufficient as ministers of a new covenant; not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life.** So God is able to graft them back in, and when you see larger numbers of Jews coming in, just know that the end of the “time of the Gentiles” is close (Ezekiel 30:3).

**(Rom.11:24) For if thou wast cut out of that which is by nature a wild olive tree, and wast grafted contrary to nature into a good olive tree;**

***how much more shall these, which are the natural [branches,] be grafted into their own olive tree? Praise God! (25) For I would not, brethren, have you ignorant of this mystery, lest ye be wise in your own conceits, that a hardening in part hath befallen Israel (That's referring to natural Israel.), until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in.*** God has hardened them, just as He said and, of course, those who have passed away in their sins are separated from the Kingdom, but the Lord is going to restore Israel. When we come close to the end of the time of the Gentiles, or “the fulness of the Gentiles,” which is all those who are going to come in, then God is going to restore Israel and the Gentiles will be hardened. Those who have not come into the Kingdom at that time will hear, but they will not obey. ***(Rom.11:26) And so all Israel shall be saved.*** Here we can see that “all Israel” is everybody in the Olive Tree: it's those who stayed; it's those who came in and stayed; and it's those who came in and left, but returned and were grafted back in. Jesus, when He went and preached the Gospel to the souls that were in prison (1 Peter 3:19), separated a group of them from Sheol, the place of the dead, and took them with Him (Psalm 68:18; Ephesians 4:8-9). So faithful people from the Old Testament are in the Kingdom because only those who are believers according to the New Covenant are in the Olive Tree. ***(Joh.7:38) He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, from within him shall flow rivers of living water. (39) But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believed on him were to receive...*** Are you going to receive the Holy Spirit? Have you not yet received the Holy Spirit? (Acts 8:16,19:2) What are you waiting for? (Acts 22:16)

**(Rom.11:26) And so all Israel shall be saved...** You can see now that “all Israel” here is not talking about all natural Israel, but those who are Jews inwardly and whose **(Rom.2:29) ... circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God. (Rom.11:26) And so all Israel shall be saved: even as it is written, There shall come out of Zion the Deliverer...** Zion, of course, is Jerusalem, and Jerusalem is that city which is “born from above” (John 3:3; Galatians 4:21-31; Revelation 21:2). It’s the born-again Jerusalem, not the one that’s in bondage with her children (Galatians 4:25), who were sons of the handmaid (Galatians 4:23-24) because of the Law. It is not them, clearly. When Jesus spoke to the Philadelphia church (Revelation 3:7-13), He spoke about them being born from above (Revelation 3:12). The Bride, that heavenly Jerusalem, is coming down out of heaven because we are being born from above. It is the Bride because Zion is not the whole church and it never was, just as Jerusalem was not the whole church and it never was. But “There shall come out of Zion the Deliverer” because God is going to shine forth out of Zion. **(Psa.14:7) Oh that the salvation of Israel were come out of Zion! When the Lord bringeth back the captivity of his people, Then shall Jacob rejoice, and Israel shall be glad.** Zion is going to be the leadership, much like **(Joh.3:29) He that hath the bride is the bridegroom...** that was spoken of Jesus and of His disciples, who were the first-fruits unto Jesus. The Deliverer is the One Who is going to bring in the remnant of Israel. Praise the Lord!

**(Rom.11:26) And so all Israel shall be saved: even as it is written, There shall come out of Zion**

***the Deliverer; He shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob: (27) And this is my covenant unto them, When I shall take away their sins. (28) As touching the gospel, they are enemies for your sake (That is, as of right now.) but as touching the election, they are beloved for the fathers' sake.*** You see, He's going to bring them the Gospel again, and once more the elect will receive it because that's what happened the first time. History just keeps repeating. ***(29) For the gifts and the calling of God are not repented of.***

It's a sad thing, but the reason so many people are going to fall away is because they're not believers according to the New Testament. ***(Joh.7:38) He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, from within him shall flow rivers of living water.*** I've never seen so many religions that pick and choose verses! They don't walk in the steps of Jesus and, therefore, they don't have the power that Jesus had and which He passed on to His disciples, His true "learners" and "followers." They have received "another Jesus," "another gospel," and "another spirit." This is nothing but anti-Christ, yet these are broadly accepted and not recognized for the cults that they are. To them, you're the one in a cult if you believe what Jesus believed and you walk in His steps and you walk in His power. To them, you're the one in a cult if you believe that the Gospel delivers you from sin and the power of darkness. Because they've never read the Word, they've just accepted what their preacher said, but they are the cult and they are the dangerous ones. These are the people who, throughout history, have killed the righteous ones who have believed the Word of God. Their forefathers killed all the prophets, they killed the disciples, they persecuted the believers

(Jeremiah 2:30; Matthew 5:12; Acts 7:52; 1 Thessalonians 2:15; etc.) These are the same people, and they persecute the believers today when they try to tell them the truth out of their love for them, just as the apostle Paul loved people as his own flesh (2 Corinthians 11:11,12:15; Colossians 1:24; Philippians 2:17; etc.)

***(Mar.7:17) And when he was entered into the house from the multitude, his disciples asked of him the parable. (18) And he saith unto them, Are ye so without understanding also? Perceive ye not, that whatsoever from without goeth into the man, [it] cannot defile him... Some people are still caught up in Old Testament doctrine because they don't understand that those "clean" and "unclean" meats of Leviticus 11 were symbols of partaking of people in their lives. So they're actually acting out the parable, but they are not keeping what the parable points to. They believe they're defiled for eating this or eating that, but Jesus said that it's not what goes into your mouth that defiles you. (Mar.7:19) Because it goeth not into his heart, but into his belly, and goeth out into the draught? [This he said,] making all meats clean.*** If you bless your food, it's blessed. If you don't believe you can bless your food, it's not blessed. It's that simple.

Of course, everything is under the curse (Deuteronomy 28:15-68). It's not just the clean or the unclean meats. All meats are under the curse, and people are dying from meats whether they are Kosher or whether they are un-Kosher. They're dying from everything out there because everything is under the curse. The only way something is not under the curse is if you are not under the curse because you believe that Jesus became the curse for you, so that you

could have Abraham's blessings (Genesis 24:1; Galatians 3:9). Jesus bore the curse (Isaiah 53:4-5,11; Matthew 8:17; 1 Peter 2:24), but these people don't believe it. They believe that they have to be very careful about what they eat, even though He's telling them, "No, it's not what you eat that defiles you." When apostle Peter didn't quite catch on, this parable was repeated for him in a more detailed way (Acts 10:9-16,34). Peter (**Act.10:11**) ... ***beholdeth the heaven opened, and a certain vessel descending, as it were a great sheet, let down by four corners upon the earth: (12) wherein were all manner of fourfooted beasts and creeping things of the earth and birds of the heaven. (13) And there came a voice to him, Rise, Peter; kill and eat. (14) But Peter said, Not so, Lord; for I have never eaten anything that is common and unclean. (15) And a voice came unto him again the second time, What God hath cleansed, make not thou common.*** God corrected Peter.

Those of you who've been Judaized need to repent and believe what Jesus said. (**Mar.7:20**) ***And he said, That which proceedeth out of the man, that defileth*** (That's the Greek word *koinóō* and it means "to make {Leviticallly} unclean, render unhallowed or unholy, defile, profane.") ***the man***. It's what comes out of you that makes you unclean, not what goes into you. And we are told to (**Heb.12:14**) ***Follow after peace with all men, and the sanctification*** (This is the Greek *hagiasmós* and it means "the process of advancing in holiness...the believer being progressively transformed by the Lord into His likeness.") ***without which no man shall see the Lord...*** So without holiness, or "sanctification," which has the same meaning, "no man shall see the Lord." "Holy" is

“clean,” and a man is unclean by what’s in his heart, and what comes out of his heart. He’s not unclean by what he eats. (**Mar.7:21**) ***For from within, out of the heart of men, evil thoughts proceed...*** How do thoughts “proceed” out of the man? They proceed out in words. If you confess Him before men, He will confess you before the Father (Matthew 10:32; Luke 12:8; Romans 10:9). He is the High Priest of our confession (Hebrews 3:1). The Greek word for “confess” is *homologeó* and it means “to speak the same as; to publicly declare.” If you don’t read the Word and if you don’t say what the Word says, you’re not being confessed before the Father. That’s a very dangerous thing because if you want the benefits of this Word, you must confess this Word.

So this “uncleanness” comes out of your mouth based on the things that you believe. It comes out of your mouth when you speak faith in the things that your dead religion believes. It comes out of your mouth when you speak faith in the things that you believe are under the curse, because you don’t understand that you are not supposed to be under the curse (Deuteronomy 28:15-68). Jesus became a curse for you (Galatians 3:13). He bore the curse, all of it. If you believe that, you will confess that, and when you confess that before men, then Jesus, Who is the High Priest of your confession, will confess it before the Father. The High Priest has to have something to offer before the Father, and that something is your confession. (**Isa.8:20**) ***To the law and to the testimony! if they speak not according to this word, surely there is no morning for them.*** And (**1Pe.4:11**) ***If any man speaketh, [speaking] as it were oracles of God...*** We are commanded to speak according to the Word because you cannot add to or take away from this Word without bringing yourself under the

curse (Revelation 22:18-19), but in our day, just as in Jesus' day, all of the religions bring their people under the curse. History is repeating. What we have to do is get back to the Word for ourselves. Go home. Read your Bible. Don't go to a church until you find out what one is supposed to look like.

Now evil thoughts proceed from within and thoughts turn into words, but they also turn into actions. You have to think something in your heart before you do it, and then those thoughts turn into actions, whether it's in words or whether it's in your feet or whether it's in your hands. It's the action that follows the thought, and that all defiles the man from the very thought onward. **(Mar.7:21) For from within, out of the heart of men, evil thoughts proceed, fornications, thefts** (For instance, it usually takes your hands to steal something; you don't have to say a word. Theft is just your works after your thoughts.), **murders, adulteries, (22) covetings, wickednesses, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, railing, pride, foolishness: (23) all these evil things proceed from within, and defile the man.** These things make the man unclean. These things make the man unholy, and we just read that without holiness, "no man shall see the Lord." We must restrict our thoughts because every sin starts with thought. Then thoughts turn into emotions, and emotions turn into actions. If you don't stop it at the thought, it turns into an emotion, and quite often, emotions will rule you, and then you will act. All sins come in threes like that.

### *Faith Brings Forth Fruit*

By way of example, let's look at the part about speaking. **(Luk.6:43) For there is no good tree that bringeth**

**forth corrupt fruit; nor again a corrupt tree that bringeth forth good fruit.** “Fruit” is your works, your actions. The fruit of the Seed of the Word that God sowed in the hearts of the people in the Parable of the Sower should have been good actions. If you don’t act on the Word, faith without works is dead (James 2:17-18,20,26). If you don’t act on the Word, you can’t claim you’re a believer, because faith brings forth fruit, and faith causes you to do works, good works. **(Luk.6:44) For each tree is known by its own fruit.** (Their “fruit” is what a person does, and every man is going to be judged according to his works {Proverbs 20:11; James 2:24; Revelation 20:12-13; etc.}) **For of thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a bramble bush gather they grapes.** Of course not, and a bramble is also thorny and hard to live with. The earth was cursed with thorns; that was part of the curse (Genesis 3:18). **(Luk.6:45) The good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is good...** The good works, the good words, the good fruit, come out of him because this treasure is in his heart. Over in the Parable of the Sower, Jesus was sowing a treasure into the hearts of men and He expected to see fruit of that treasure, but the devil came to steal the Seed which was sown in their hearts. The devil can do that because, if you don’t act on what you know, the Word says he can steal it from you. That means you’ve made no progress and have borne no fruit.

**(Luk.6:45) The good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is good; and the evil [man] out of the evil [treasure] bringeth forth that which is evil: for out of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.** And the Bible also says, **(Pro.23:7KJV) For as he thin-**

***keth in his heart, so [is] he...*** If the Word of God is in your heart, then that's what will come out of your mouth. You will speak in accordance with the Word of God; you will *homologeó*, which means, "I agree, I publicly declare, I confess." You are commanded to agree with, and speak the same as, what the Word of God says so that your High Priest can defend you before the Father. **(Mat.10:32)** ***Every one therefore who shall confess me before men, him will I also confess before my Father who is in heaven. (33) But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father who is in heaven.***

If you skip over those verses that might not be according to your religion, then you're skipping over part of what creates **(Col.11:27)** ... ***Christ in you, the hope of glory.*** Nobody else has "the hope of glory" but those who have Christ in them, and Christ is the Word (John 1:1-5,14). That means if you skip a part of the Word, you're skipping a part of Christ. It's amazing to me how people are so willing to pick and choose what parts of the Bible they want to believe, and how they just deny the rest. They have no conscience, because you can show them the Word in black and white, but they'll say, "No, we don't believe that." "Well 'that' is the Word of God, so you're admitting you don't believe the Word of God!" Folks, this Word has to be in us so that we become the Word made flesh. That's how we bear the fruit of Jesus Christ. He was the Word made flesh. **(John 1:14)** ***And the Word became flesh, and dwelt among us (and we beheld his glory, glory as of the only begotten from the Father), full of grace and truth.***

**(Luk.6:45)** ***The good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which***

***is good; and the evil [man] out of the evil [treasure] bringeth forth that which is evil: for out of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.***

We're told, ***(Mat.12:37) For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.*** How do your words justify or condemn you? ***(Rev.22:18) I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, if any man shall add unto them, God shall add unto him the plagues which are written in this book: (19) and if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part from the tree of life, and out of the holy city, which are written in this book.*** There are severe penalties if you add to or take away from the Words of the Bible to make it agree with your dead religion. We have to repent and get back to bearing fruit.

### *We Must Know the Word to Walk with Christ*

***(Gal.5:16), But I say, Walk by the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh.*** How do we “walk” in the Spirit? We walk in the Spirit when we walk according to the Word, because then we’re walking according to the Will of God, and when we walk according to the Will of God, we’re not going to fulfill the lust of the flesh. It’s important that you know the Word so that you know how to walk with God. ***(Amo.3:3) Shall two walk together, except they have agreed?*** How do you know who you’re agreeing with, how do you know who you’re walking with, if you haven’t studied the Word to find out Who He is? He is the Word. He’s not schizophrenic. What He says, is Who He

is. Remember the Lord on the white horse was the Word of God (Revelation 19:16). ***(Gal.5:17) For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh...*** The Greek word for “lust” is *epithumia* and it means “desire, eagerness for.” People are consumed by desires and they like to justify their evil desires by denying the Word or adding to the Word so that they can do what they want to do. They don’t understand that they’re throwing away their fruit. If you are one of those people who is doing this, and if you keep on doing this, you will not have time to bear the fruit of Christ because there is a door that is closing. You will not be in the one group out of those four that is chosen. You’ll be among those who are rejected.

***(Gal.5:17) For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh; for these are contrary the one to the other; that ye may not do the things that ye would.*** You can’t do the things that you desire to do; you have to do the things that God desires for you to do. ***(Php.2:12) So then, my beloved, even as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling; (13) for it is God who worketh in you both to will and to work, for his good pleasure.*** That’s how He saves you: He puts His Will in you, and then you can do what you want to do, because what you want is what God wants. ***(Joh.8:36) If therefore the Son shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed*** (That’s the Greek *ontós* meaning “really, truly, actually.”). So now you see how freedom comes, and it’s joy, too. If you love to serve God and keep His commandments, if you study the Word and you put it in your heart, then you’ll find opportuni-

ties to agree with the Word and out of that good treasure, you're going to bear fruit.

*We are Either With Him or Against Him*

**(Gal.5:18) But if ye are led by the Spirit, ye are not under the law. (19) Now the works of the flesh are manifest...** Paul's going to tell you what the "fruit" is and notice that they're called "works of the flesh," but a little further down, they're called "fruit of the spirit." That's because the "fruit" is the "works." These are not only the "works" of the flesh that Paul is about to talk about, these are the "fruits" of the flesh. He's just emphasizing a different aspect here. **(Gal.5:19) Now the works of the flesh** (Which are the "fruits" of the flesh.) **are manifest, which are [these:] fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness** (The Greek word is *aselgeia* meaning to "reject restraint; outrageous conduct, conduct shocking to public decency, a wanton violence, wantonness, lewdness," or in other words, "a license to do what you want or desire to do."), **(20) idolatry**... Yes, many are in religious idolatry today and they don't know that they are following anti-Christ. "Anti" means "against," but it also means "in the place of." Jesus said, **(Mat.12:20) He that is not with me is against me**... You have only those two choices. You're for Him and for His Word, therefore you speak and love His Word and you repent, or you're against Him. **(Gal.5:20) Idolatry, sorcery** (This is the Greek *pharmakeia* meaning "witchcraft, magic, sorcery, the use of medicine, drugs or spells."), **enmities, strife, jealousies, wraths, factions, divisions, parties, (21) envyings, drunkenness, revellings, and such like;**

***of which I forewarn you, even as I did forewarn you, that they who practise such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.*** God hates all of that and He warns us, “If you do these things, you will not inherit the Kingdom of God.” The Kingdom of God is where God rules, and so if you’re doing these things, He’s not ruling you. That means you’re not inheriting His Kingdom because you’re not bearing fruit, since the fruit is the fruit of His Kingdom, too.

***(Gal.5:22) But the fruit of the Spirit*** (Or you could say the “works of the Spirit,” because the “works” and the “fruit” are the same.) ***is love, joy, peace...*** Do you do these things? Are you doing these things? That’s the fruit of the Spirit. The Bible says God ***(Rom.2:6) ... will render to every man according to his works.*** God doesn’t have to judge you according to your faith because ***(Jam.2:17) ... faith, if it have not works, is dead in itself,*** so He just judges the works. People who say they have faith but don’t have works as the proof of their faith, those people have nothing to get them into the one group that is chosen from among the four. What are the works of faith? These are the works. If you are really believing, you will have these works, which He calls “fruit of the Spirit.” ***(Gal.5:22) But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, (23) meekness, self-control; against such there is no law.*** How do you fulfill the Law? He’s telling you right there how to fulfill the Law. ***(24) And they that are of Christ Jesus have crucified the flesh with the passions and the lusts thereof.*** Remember that we just read, ***(Gal.5:17) For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh;***

***for these are contrary the one to the other; that ye may not do the things that ye would.*** So those people who have no control over their flesh and just do whatever they want, are proving that they haven't "crucified the flesh with the passions and lusts thereof."

### *Deny the Flesh and it Will Die*

What is "crucifixion"? "Crucifixion" is taking the Word and submitting to it even though your "old man" (Ephesians 4:22; Colossians 3:9) does not want to submit. You see, the more you refuse to submit to what the old man wants, the more he dies. You're not feeding him, so he dies. If you give him what he wants, it's harder the next time, and he will just take more and more ground. The devil knows that and he's there to offer you all these flesh-desiring things, the pleasures of sin for a season (Hebrews 11:25), because he knows that as long as you partake of them, you're not bearing fruit. Then when the time comes for you to be judged and you have not born enough fruit to enter the Kingdom, you will be rejected and cast away. ***(Gal.5:25) If we live by the Spirit, by the Spirit let us also walk. (26) Let us not become vainglorious, provoking one another, envying one another. (Gal.6:1) Brethren, even if a man be overtaken in any trespass, ye who are spiritual, restore such a one in a spirit of gentleness; looking to thyself, lest thou also be tempted.*** Yes, true humbleness is a protection.

***(2Co.11:2) For I am jealous over you with a godly jealousy: for I espoused you to one husband...*** That is to receive only the seed of that Husband. If you receive the seed of man, which cannot be defended by the

Word of God and is contrary to the Word of God, then you are in the body of the Harlot. She is the mother of the harlots of the earth (Revelation 17:5). It doesn't matter what you think or which religion it is, it makes no difference whatsoever, because if you receive the seed of man instead of the seed of the Word of God, it will not crucify you. Man does not crucify himself. The Word of God is crucifying. It crucifies your flesh. It denies the flesh its food.

***(2Co.11:2) For I am jealous over you with a godly jealousy: for I espoused you to one husband, that I might present you as a pure virgin to Christ.*** A "virgin" is one who has not received the seed of man. The seed of man is the problem, because the seed of man does not bring forth the fruit of Christ. There's only one seed that brings forth the fruit of Christ, and that is the Word of God. Therefore, you need to seek out your own salvation with fear and trembling (Philippians 2:12), because if you don't, you are going to fall away. And this is the time of the great falling-away, even as Revelation 12 speaks. ***(2Co.11:3) But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve in his craftiness, your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity and the purity that is toward Christ.*** Christ is the Word, and it's so sad that the serpent has already beguiled many away from the Word of God.

*Fear the Lord and Esteem His Word Above All Else*

How does the serpent beguile people and make them fall away? ***(2Co.10:3) For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war according to the flesh (4) (for the weapons of our warfare are not of the flesh, but***

***mighty before God to the casting down of strongholds***) (A “stronghold” is any place that the enemy has taken from you, so you must retake that territory from him. Paul goes on to tell you how to do that.); **(5) casting down imaginations** (This is the Greek word *logismos* and it means “reasoning, thinking; a conception, device” or “reaching a personal opinion.”), **and every high thing** (This is the Greek *hupsóma* and it means “height, barrier, bulwark; presumption,” so in other words, “a presumptuous thought.”) **that is exalted against the knowledge of God...** You cast down the lie, the error, with the Truth. “Repentance” is the process of casting down your error and taking up Truth. This is the only thing that’s going to save you from falling away, the only thing: “Casting down imaginations and every high thing that is exalted against the knowledge of God.” Since the knowledge of God, the Word of God, is the standard that you’re going to be judged by, you must go to the Word of God to find out if what you’re thinking is correct. Do not trust men, because they don’t have that high of an esteem for the Word. Don’t trust them; you cannot trust them. You must look in the Word for yourself and see what the Truth is. Don’t go and listen to them first, because it’s a lot harder to uproot error than it is to not put it there in the first place. Once you have accepted error, it can lead to religious pride or fear and so on.

The devil makes war against people overcoming dead religion. He loves for people to be caught in dead religion because he knows they’re not going to bear fruit. He knows he’ll have them sooner or later because they’re all going to fall away. The overcomers outgrow that and keep on going as they read the Word. They’ll see what I saw when I was a baby Christian: that all those dead religions don’t believe

the Word. I moved on as I realized that there were some people who believed a whole lot more of the Word, but then I saw that they didn't believe certain parts, so I moved on again. You just keep growing, you don't need to stop. Folks, you can't have more respect for people, or that building that they have, or that religion that they have, or that man at the front, than you respect the Word of God. Only the Word of God will give you His Life, and therefore only the Word of God is acceptable. ***(Joh.3:13) And no one hath ascended into heaven, but he that descended out of heaven, even the Son of man, who is in heaven.*** Who is going to heaven? Only Jesus. Only Jesus, "Christ in you, the hope of glory," is going to heaven. He is the Word, made flesh (John 1:14). Jesus said He was the manna that came down in the wilderness to give life to them in the wilderness (John 6:41,51). Everything that's against the knowledge of the Word of God must be cast down. We are to bring every thought into captivity. This is how we win the battle.

A lot of people are going to lose this battle, folks, a lot of people have lost this battle, and you will lose it, too, unless you read the Word of God and let it be your conscience. Your conscience is not even acceptable before God until it's renewed. Your conscience tells you to do good and not to do bad, but you have to show it what's good and what's bad. That's why you put the Word of God in your heart. The Word is the Seed that brings forth the fruit of Christ and there is no other seed that can bring forth the fruit of Jesus Christ, none.

For those of you who send your poor children off to a pagan college run by a bunch of leftists and wonder why they come back pagans, it's because they've been coerced and bribed into it. They realize pretty quickly that they

have to give answers according to what those teachers say or they don't have any favor, so they sacrifice their Christianity. People think you need to have a higher education to make a good living, but you need to have Jesus for eternal life. It's better to be poor and have Jesus. That's got to be the main thing. Don't send your kids off to some school where these leftists are ruling, for goodness' sake! You're destroying them. Neither should you sit under somebody who is full of leaven, somebody who does not rightly use the Word of God to prove his points (2 Timothy 2:15), because **(Psa.119:160) *The sum of thy word is truth...*** It's not just bits and pieces here and there, it is the totality, the sum. It takes all of it put together to bring forth the Truth. You cannot cast out any of the Word of God.

**(2Co.10:5) *Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that is exalted against the knowledge of God, and bringing every thought into captivity to the obedience of Christ;*** (This is so important! We are to bring every thought into submission to Christ, Who is the Word of God.); **(6) *and being in readiness to avenge all disobedience, when your obedience shall be made full.*** Be careful that you don't get caught in the trap of judging people according to your religion. It's only when you are obedient to the Word that God can use you to correct someone else. If you're not being obedient to the Word, you need to keep your mouth shut, and go and repent.

*Be Wary of "Another Jesus" Which is Powerless to Save*

**(2Co.11:4) *For if he that cometh preacheth another Jesus...*** Do the religions preach "another Jesus"?

Yes, they conveniently have made-up their own Jesus, even though the Bible says, **(Heb.13:8) *Jesus Christ [is] the same yesterday and to-day, [yea] and for ever.*** Yes, they say Jesus has changed, and their “Jesus” is useless because he just kind of watches until you get through with life, and then he raptures you. He doesn’t heal the sick, he doesn’t cast out devils, he doesn’t preach the real Gospel that actually saves people from sin. Their “Jesus” tells you that it’s even okay to sin, that he loves you enough to forgive any and every sin but, of course, it’s the devil in a “Jesus” disguise.

**(2Co.11:4) *For if he that cometh preacheth another Jesus, whom we did not preach...*** We know the Jesus Whom the disciples preached, because they all walked a holy life in the same steps of the same Jesus. They did His works because they had power but now, according to these people, you’re not expected to have any power. They say, “You can’t do that. You’re always going to be a sinner.” It makes the preacher feel comfortable, since he’s a sinner, and he would be badly convicted if you were to find out that you could depart from sin through the power of the Gospel. These people stand in the doorway and they won’t enter in, and they won’t let you enter in, either. **(Mat.23:13) *But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye shut the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye enter not in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering in to enter.*** History is just repeating and the blood of many is on their hands because they have another “Jesus” who does nothing that the first Jesus did, and the excuse they give you is that, somehow, “It all passed away.” Well, it didn’t all pass away, because Corinthians was written quite a while after Jesus, and even

up until this day, there are people who do the works of Jesus. ***(Joh.14:12) Verily, verily, I say unto you, he that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto the Father.***

If you try to point out Scriptural proofs to them, those apostate preachers start saying that it's of the devil, but then they're blaspheming the Holy Spirit by attributing a work of the Holy Spirit to the devil. What you end up with in that case is a devil in the pulpit. God doesn't want your minds to ***(2Co.11:3) ... be corrupted from the simplicity and the purity that is towards Christ.*** Just believe the Word. The preachers say they believe the Word, but they've ripped pages out here and there until there's not much left of the New Testament. ***(2Co.11:4) For if he that cometh preacheth another Jesus, whom we*** (This is speaking of the original disciples.) ***did not preach, or if ye receive a different spirit*** (If you receive another "Jesus," it is another spirit because "Jesus [is] the same, yesterday, to-day, [yea] and for ever." It's sad but Christians caught up in religion can be very mean and unfruitful.), ***which ye did not receive, or a different gospel*** (It is a different gospel when it doesn't deliver you from the curse, when it doesn't heal your body, when it doesn't deliver you from demon spirits. When it doesn't meet your needs, it's a different gospel.), ***which ye did not accept, ye do well to bear with [him].*** So you have another "Jesus," a different spirit, and a different gospel, if they're not the same as that which was preached from the beginning.

Let's look at this "different spirit" and this "different gospel." ***(1Jn.2:19) They went out from us, but they***

***were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would have continued with us: but [they went out,] that they might be made manifest that they all are not of us.*** Here's a falling-away, right here. Those people were not of the Word of God and they went out for the purpose of cleansing the body, because "a little leaven leavens the whole lump" (Hosea 7:4; Matthew 13:33; Galatians 5:9; etc.) The same thing happens today. Such people go out because of their own selfish ambitions. They try to hide their sin, too, but God won't permit it to be hidden and He causes them to fall away to get them out of your midst.

***(1Jn.2:20) And ye have an anointing from the Holy One, and ye know all things. (21) I have not written unto you because ye know not the truth, but because ye know it, and because no lie is of the truth. (22) Who is the liar but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? This is the antichrist, [even] he that denieth the Father and the Son.*** (This is talking about those people who "went out from us," the people who leave.) ***(23) Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father: he that confesseth the Son hath the Father also. (24) As for you, let that abide in you which ye heard from the beginning.*** ("That ... which ye heard from the beginning" is the words that were written in the Bible. If you let them abide in you, you will prove who you are; you will prove whether you're one of us or not.) ***If that which ye heard from the beginning abide in you, ye also shall abide in the Son*** (Do that and you won't fall away.), ***and in the Father. (25) And this is the promise which he promised us, [even] the life eternal.*** Only the Seed that manifests Jesus Christ in you can give you life eter-

nal, because **(Joh.3:13) ... no one hath ascended into heaven, but he that descended out of heaven...** God is looking for a son of God, a manifested son of God, in you, and the only way to bring that to pass is through the Words that we received from the beginning. How far the overwhelming majority of what's called "Christianity" has fallen away from that! They've brought a stench upon the Name, because people believe that what they're doing is Christianity and it's just so sad.

**(2Jo.1:5) And now I beseech thee, lady, not as though I wrote to thee a new commandment, but that which we had from the beginning, that we love one another. (6) And this is love, that we should walk after his commandments. This is the commandment, even as ye heard from the beginning, that ye should walk in it.** You have to find out what His commandments are and follow them if you want eternal life, if you want to not fall away. You don't have to go to church. You may protest, "Oh, but David, we're not supposed to forsake the 'assembling together,' as Hebrews 10:25 commands." That's exactly right, but it's assembling together with believers. It's assembling with **(Joh.7:38) He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said...** You don't have to go some place where that they're going to leaven you and make you into something other than a walking, talking, Jesus, which is **(Col.1:27) ... Christ in you, the hope of glory.** We are supposed to behold "as in a mirror the glory of the Lord." That real Jesus, that first Jesus, is Who we need to see when we look in the mirror. We want to come into His Image. **(2Co.3:18) But we all, with unveiled face beholding as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, are transformed into the same**

***image from glory to glory, even as from the Lord the Spirit.*** Not “another Jesus,” the same Image. When you go into a so-called “church” that has no power, no gifts of the Spirit, and where they don’t believe you can even obey the Word of God, what are you doing there? It’s not a church. They haven’t “come out.” The church is the “called out ones” but they have not come out (Isaiah 52:11; 2 Corinthians 6:17; Revelation 18:4; etc.) There’s dead religion there. They’re moralizing you and you’ll never overcome by moralizing; it has to be the Gospel. You have to believe in what Jesus took away from you and delivered you from at the Cross (Isaiah 53:5; Romans 4:25; Colossians 1:13; Hebrews 9:28; 1 Peter 2:24; etc.) And you have to speak it, too, because faith without works is dead (James 2:14-17).

***(2Jn.1:6) And this is love, that we should walk after his commandments. This is the commandment, even as ye heard from the beginning*** (There it is again.), ***that ye should walk in it. (7) For many deceivers are gone forth into the world...*** We just read, ***(1Jn.2:19) They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would have continued with us: but [they went out,] that they might be made manifest that they all are not of us.*** The pulpits are full of these deceivers. ***(2Jn.1:7) For many deceivers are gone forth into world, [even] they that confess not that Jesus Christ cometh in the flesh.*** The real Jesus is coming in your flesh if you’re taking-in this Word and repenting. The real Jesus, the original Jesus, not the false “Jesus,” “cometh in the flesh.” Notice it doesn’t say the past tense “came in the flesh”; it actually says the present tense “cometh in the flesh.” So if you claim, “No, I’m always going to be a sinner,” instead

of saying that “Jesus cometh in my flesh,” then you’re repeating a false, anti-Christ Gospel. There’s nothing that the devil would rather have you believe than the lie that you’re always going to be a sinner. Jesus Christ made you free from sin (Romans 6:6,11,18) and delivered you out of the power of darkness (Colossians 1:13), but unless you believe that, you will not have it. If you believe the anti-Christ preachers instead, you’ll have only what they have, but it didn’t save them and it won’t save you. **(2Jn.1:7) For many deceivers are gone forth into world, [even] they that confess not that Jesus Christ cometh in the flesh. This is the deceiver and the antichrist.** We must change our mind, which is what “repent” means. We must cast down everything that’s not the Word of God because, “This is the deceiver and the antichrist.”

**(2Jn.1:8) Look to yourselves, that ye lose not the things which we have wrought** (We call that a “falling-away.”), **but that ye receive a full reward.** **(9) Whosoever goeth onward and abideth not in the teaching of Christ** (These are the people who start out with you, but don’t stay with you.), **hath not God...** It doesn’t matter if they call themselves a “Christian.” It doesn’t matter if they accepted Jesus as their “personal Savior.” You have to judge by the Word. If they go on and they do not abide in the teaching, they don’t have God. Let’s just say what the Bible says: they don’t have God. The devil will do his best to deceive you into thinking that they still have God even though they’re believing what they choose to believe, but that’s not the truth. You have to have the renewed mind of Christ and that’s what it means to “repent.” The Greek *metanoéo* translated “repent” means “to change one’s mind or purpose...particularly with reference

to acceptance of the will of God.” You have to kick out the old, virus-infected “software” and put in the new “programming” of the Word. **(2Jn.1:9) Whosoever goeth onward and abideth not in the teaching of Christ, hath not God: he that abideth in the teaching, the same hath both the Father and the Son.** So it’s “he that abideth in the teaching” of the Word that has God. If you complain, “But, David, I don’t have any good churches around me,” it doesn’t matter. You still don’t go some place where they’re going to pollute you, infect you, because many people get caught up in these things and they never come back to the Lord. Apostate preachers like to make you comfortable with not reading the Word. They know if you read the Word for yourself, you’re going to have questions that they can’t answer.

### *Beware of False Teachings*

**(2Jn.1:10) If any one cometh unto you, and bringeth not this teaching,** (That “any one” is speaking of “whosoever goeth onward and abideth not in the teaching of Christ, hath not God.”), **receive him not into [your] house, and give him no greeting** (That’s because he has an evil spirit to spread to you, an evil spirit that will make you quite comfortable with falling away into back-slidden religion.): **(11) for he that giveth him greeting partaketh in his evil works.** Yes, I’ve taught this for a long time and some people feel uneasy when they hear it, but it’s the Word of God and you must obey the Word if you want to avoid the spirits that other people have. You must repent. You must turn to the Lord and **(1Jn.2:24) ... let that abide in you which ye heard**

***from the beginning***, which is, ***(Col.1:27) ... Christ in you, the hope of glory.***

***(1Jn.2:28) And now, [my] little children, abide in him; that, if he shall be manifested...*** That word, “manifested,” is the Greek word *phaneroó*, which means to “make visible” or to “cause to shine (illumine).” In other words, this may be read, “if He shall be caused to shine in you,” or, “if you come into His glory.” The Bible also says that as we are ***(2Co.3:18) ... beholding as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, (we) are transformed into the same image from glory to glory...*** We should be shining brighter and brighter. The more Word you put in you and the more you obey, the more you shine. ***(1Jn.2:28) And now, [my] little children, abide in him; that, if he shall be manifested, we may have boldness, and not be ashamed before him at his coming.*** There are people who will be ashamed at His coming because they were deceived, and they allowed themselves to be deceived. They didn’t study the Word for themselves to learn that God expects the glory of God to be manifested in His sons.

### *Pride Brings Darkness*

***(1Jn.2:29) If ye know that he is righteous, ye know that every one also that doeth righteousness is begotten of him.*** “Begotten” is the Greek *gennaó* and means “I bring forth, give birth to”; “beget (procreate a descendant), produce offspring; (passive) be born.” You see, we are to be “born of Him,” and if you do righteousness, you are born of Him. ***(1Jn.3:9) Whosoever is begotten (That’s also *gennaó* or “born.”) of God doeth***

***no sin, because his seed abideth in him*** (Again, the “seed” is the Word; this may be read as “His Word abideth in him.”): ***and he cannot sin because he is begotten*** (This is *gennaó*, too.) ***of God. (10) In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil...*** Notice here that the children of the devil are also coming into manifestation. What did Jesus say about the tares sown among the wheat? ***(Mat.13:27) And the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst thou not sow good seed in thy field? whence then hath it tares? (28) And he said unto them, An enemy hath done this. And the servants say unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? (29) But he saith, Nay; lest haply while ye gather up the tares, ye root up the wheat with them. (30) Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of the harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather up first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them; but gather the wheat into my barn.*** A tare bears only very, very small fruit. It’s not going to “pass muster”; it’s not going to “measure up to the required standard” (Matthew 13:8,23; Mark 4:8,20; Luke 8:8,15). ***(1Jn.3:10) In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.*** “Love” is the most important “fruit” for us to bear (1 Corinthians 13:1-13).

The main reason people fall away, the main reason “they went out from us,” is usually because there is no love in them (1 John 2:19). Instead, they’re angry and they’re unforgiving, especially when they can’t get you to agree with their sinful ways. These are people who keep their sins,

sometimes because they don't know how to get rid of them but, usually, they're just too proud to do it. The solution in every case is always to humble ourselves to the Word. Humility is super-important. We're told, **(1Jn.1:6) *If we say that we have fellowship with him and walk in the darkness...*** What is this "darkness"? It's not submitting to the Light of the Word. You can be in religion, you can go to church every day, and still walk in darkness, but you can't submit to the Light of the Word and be in darkness. **(1Jn.1:6) *If we say that we have fellowship with him and walk in the darkness, we lie, and do not the truth: (7) but if we walk in the light*** (Again, this is the Light of the Word.), ***as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another*** (If you walk in the Light, you have fellowship with the brethren. You don't have to be one of those who went out from among us as anti-Christ {2 John 1:7,9}.), ***and the blood of Jesus his Son cleanseth us from all sin.*** (And if you walk in the Light, you will have both fellowship with the brethren and the Blood will cleanse you.) **(8) *If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. (9) If we confess our sins...*** This is where humility comes in. Where there's honesty and love, there's humility. Many people have spirits of fear or rejection or both, which keep them from confessing their sin. Many people have spirits of pride and think they're better than somebody else, or they may have unforgiveness toward somebody. In any case, the Lord promises He is going to give you help, if you confess your sin. **(1Jn.1:9) *If we confess our sins, he is faithful and righteous to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.*** So there is humility involved in not falling-away.

As a person's sins build-up in them, they fall-away because the sin overcomes the Seed of the Word. Folks, there is a great falling-away coming, and this great falling-away is going to be due to people ignoring the principles that we're looking at. The Bible says, **(Heb.13:8) *Jesus Christ is the same yesterday and to-day, yea and for ever.*** We must continue in the faith. We must repent and turn our life over to Him, and walk in His ways. **(Col.1:9) *For this cause we also, since the day we heard [it,] do not cease to pray and make request for you, that ye may be filled with the knowledge of his will in all spiritual wisdom and understanding*** (Wow! God does offer this; you're not praying for something that you don't think can happen. That's awesome!), **(10) *to walk worthily of the Lord unto all pleasing,*** (Oh, my goodness, that's awesome, too!), ***bearing fruit in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God...*** Of course, the knowledge of God gives you power, but knowledge also makes you more responsible. **(Luk.12:48) *... And to whomsoever much is given, of him shall much be required: and to whom they commit much, of him will they ask the more.*** We are expected to walk in a deeper and deeper knowledge of the Word. If you put the Word of God aside and say, "Well, I don't want to see anymore because then I'll be more responsible," then either you won't bear any fruit or you won't bear enough fruit. The choice you make will prove whether or not you're one of the elect.

**(Col.1:11) *Strengthened with all power, according to the might of his glory...*** You can't have power unless you have the Holy Spirit, because the Holy Spirit is what empowers you. **(Act.1:8) *But ye shall re-***

**ceive power, when the Holy Spirit is come upon you...** This was spoken to the believers. I've had people tell me, "Oh, no, David. We get the Holy Spirit when we get saved." No, you don't. You need to read the book of Acts. **(Col.1:11) Strengthened with all power, according to the might of his glory, unto all patience and longsuffering with joy** (All these wonderful gifts are being offered to us through this prayer.); **(12) giving thanks unto the Father, who made us meet** (That's the Greek word *hikanoó* and it means "making someone qualified, i.e. able; competent.") **to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light; (13) who delivered us out of the power of darkness** (You don't have to obey the devil, you don't have to obey sin, because God has already delivered you through your faith in such verses as this.), **and translated us into the kingdom of the Son of his love; (14) in whom we have our redemption, the forgiveness of our sins: (15) who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of all creation ... (18) And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all [things] he might have the preeminence. (19) For it was the good pleasure [of the Father] that in him should all the fulness dwell** ("Fulness" here just means "the divinity"; it does not mean "Father, Son, and Holy Spirit."); **(20) and through him to reconcile all [things] unto himself...** Notice that the word "things" was not in the original and there's no numeric pattern in it. You see, God is not reconciling all "things"; He's reconciling all of His people. This should correctly read, "And through him to reconcile all unto himself."

*Continue in Faith and Reconciliation Will be Manifested*

The word translated there as “reconcile” is the Greek word *apokatalassó*, which means “to exchange completely,” and the Lord is able “to exchange completely” but first you have to know what it is that Jesus has to give you. The Bible says, **(1Jn.4:17) *Herein is love made perfect with us, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment; because as he is, even so are we in this world. Everything*** He has, He has given to you at the Cross, but there is an exchange that has to be made, because your sins are put upon that Cross and His righteousness is given to you. This exchange is being carried out as you walk by faith. It’s being carried out as you see by faith what belongs to you, which are the blessings, and what doesn’t belong to you, which is the sin, the corruption, the curse, and so on. **(Col.1:19) *For it was the good pleasure of the Father to reconcile all unto himself ... (20) having made peace through the blood of his cross; through him, [I say,] whether things upon the earth, or [things] in the heavens.*** (And, again, the word, “things,” is not there in the original.) **(21) *And you, being in time past alienated and enemies in your mind...*** That is speaking of the unrenewed mind, the normal, natural mind that you inherit from your parents and your environment. Your natural mind is the enemy of God (Romans 8:7). Only the renewed mind of Christ is at total peace with God, but you can’t renew your mind unless you put this Word in your heart.

**(Col.1:21) *And you, being in time past alienated and enemies in your mind in your evil works, (22) yet now hath he reconciled...*** There’s that same word,

*apokatalassó*. He “exchanged” you completely. He took your sins and nailed them on that Cross. He took His righteousness, His works, His life, His provision, everything, and He gave it to you. It’s already done, but there’s a condition. **(Col.1:22) Yet now hath he reconciled in the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and without blemish and unproveable before him** (This reconciliation will make you everything that He is, which is “holy and without blemish and unproveable,” and now here’s that condition.): **(Col.1:23) if so be that ye continue in the faith...** We’ve come right back to where we started. If. So why do people fall away? **(Rom.11:19) Thou wilt say then, Branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in. (20) Well; by their unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by thy faith. Be not highminded, but fear: (21) for if God spared not the natural branches, neither will he spare thee. (22) Behold then the goodness and severity of God: toward them that fell, severity; but toward thee, God’s goodness, if thou continue in his goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off. (23) And they also, if they continue not in their unbelief, shall be grafted in: for God is able to graft them in again.** The only thing that causes you to stand in the Olive Tree is your faith, not the “faith” that religion gives you, it’s the faith that the Word of God gives you. **(Rom.10:17) So beliefe cometh of hearing, and hearing by the word of Christ.** The most important thing you can possibly do for yourself and your children is to teach them to love the Word of God at every opportunity that you have. If you send them off to college, they’re probably not going to read the Word there because they won’t be able to make time for that.

***(Col.1:22) Yet now hath he reconciled in the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and without blemish and unproveable before him*** (He will reconcile you. You will bear the fruit of Jesus Christ. His life, His nature, His purity, His health, His deliverance, His provision, all of this will be yours, but you have to believe it.): ***(23) if so be that ye continue in the faith*** (Jesus said, {*Mat.24:13*} ***But he that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved.***), ***grounded and stedfast, and not moved away from the hope of the gospel***... Obviously, a lot of people are moved away from the Gospel. It's easy to forget the things of God. You have to constantly renew your mind. You have to put the Word in there, and you have to keep putting the Word in there, until the Word overcomes what's already in there. Some people are better at this than others, but then, some people spend more time with the Lord in the Word than others. If you love Him, you're going to keep His commandments (John 14:15), and if you love Him, you're going to search out His commandments so you can keep them. If you love truth and righteousness and purity and reconciliation, you will run after them.

***(Col.1:22) Yet now hath he reconciled in the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and without blemish and unproveable before him*** (Many people think this reconciliation is just something to be accepted by faith and that it doesn't really have to be manifested, but that's false. Read the context here, again. You're reconciled if you continue.): ***(23) if so be that ye continue in the faith, grounded and stedfast, and not moved away from the hope of the gospel which ye heard, which was preached***

**in all creation under heaven; whereof I Paul was made a minister.** Oh, how awesome! The Lord is a great Savior! And notice that Colossians 1:9-23 is actually a wonderful prayer that you can pray over yourself.

**(1Pe.1:3) Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to his great mercy begat us again unto a living hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, (4) unto an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you, (5) who by the power of God are guarded through faith unto a salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.** The endurance of your faith brings you that reconciliation, that “exchange.” At the end of each trial, you either receive His salvation or you keep what you have, but if you endure in your faith, you are going to receive salvation. That’s what God has promised, past tense. He said it’s already been done, it’s already been given, but you have to endure in your faith. You receive it if you endure in your faith, “grounded and stedfast, and not moved away from the hope of the gospel,” so you continue in your faith and hold fast. Remember that faith **(Rom.4:17) ... calleth the things that are not, as though they were.** You consider it done, because **(Heb.11:1KJV) ... faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.** You’re believing for something that you don’t see.

Jesus taught us how faith works. He said, **(Mar.11:24) All things whatsoever ye pray and ask for, believe that ye received them, and ye shall have them.** That’s because we received them back at the reconciliation, at the Cross. Believe you have received. Don’t talk against

it; don't add to the Word or take away from the Word, just speak the Word. **(1Pe.4:11) *If any man speaketh, [speaking] as it were oracles of God...*** Agree with the Word. Again, **(1Pe.1:5) *Who by the power of God are guarded through faith unto a salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.*** So, holding fast to this faith brings you to salvation. **(6) *Wherein ye greatly rejoice, though now for a little while, if need be, ye have been put to grief in manifold trials...*** That's the Greek word *peirasmos* and it means "temptation" or "test" and "both senses can apply simultaneously (depending on the context). The positive sense ('test') and negative sense ('temptation') are functions of the context." You're tested, so let patience in your trials cause you to be perfect. **(Jas.1:2) *Knowing that the proving of your faith worketh patience. (4) And let patience have its perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, lacking in nothing.***

We're believing to see the Lord, Jesus Christ. **(1Pe.1:7) *That the proof (That's the Greek word *dokimion* meaning "a test, trial ... to prove genuineness.") of your faith, [being] more precious than gold that perisheth though it is proved by fire, may be found unto praise and glory and honor at the revelation of Jesus Christ (This is speaking about the revealing, or manifestation, of Jesus Christ in you): (8) *whom not having seen ye love; on whom, though now ye see him not, yet believing, ye rejoice greatly with joy unspeakable and full of glory...**** Yes, we're believing to see the Lord, Jesus Christ, in the "mirror," and then we're believing to see Him in the sky. **(2Co.3:18) *But we all, with unveiled face beholding as in a mirror the***

***glory of the Lord, are transformed into the same image from glory to glory, even as from the Lord the Spirit.*** And, of course, He's coming back to pick the "fruit," those who have the works of the Kingdom.

***(1Pe.1:9) Receiving the end of your faith, [even] the salvation of [your] souls.*** When you first get saved, that's only the salvation of your spirit. Your "soul" is your mind, your will, and your emotions. The salvation of your soul comes if you walk by faith and, therefore, your spirit is manifested in your soul. Otherwise, your flesh will be manifested in your soul and that's called ***(Jud.1:12) ... twice dead, plucked up by the roots.*** So you endure in your faith to receive the end of your faith, which is the manifestation. ***(1Pe.1:10) Concerning which salvation the prophets sought and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace that [should come] unto you: (11) searching what [time] or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did point unto, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glories that should follow them.*** Amen. Praise You, Father!

Lord, we love Your Word. We ask that You would bring to our remembrance all things that You have said unto us. Lord, we want to be overcomers. We want to receive the fullness of our reconciliation, which You provided for us at the Cross. We want the fullness of Christ in us, "Christ in you, the hope of glory," and, Lord, we know that as Christ grows in us and fruit is born in us, the less likely we are to fall away, because the One in us is Christ, and, of course, He doesn't fall away. We ask, Lord, that You grant us repentance of everything that is contrary to the Word. We ask, Lord, that You please put a love in us for the Word and

a love in us for Your commandments, because those who love You are the ones who keep Your commandments.

We ask You to grant us repentance from those things that need to be cast down, those vain imaginations that exalt themselves against the knowledge of God. Lord, let us bring every thought into captivity, as You've taught, and unto the obedience of Christ, Who is the Word. Father, this is what we desire. We thank You for that gift that You have given unto us. Help us to be humble, Lord, to confess our sins one to another, because You give grace to the humble but You resist the proud and we know the proud don't grow. They can spend a whole lifetime claiming to be Christian, but they never grow in the faith or the works of Jesus Christ. Many times, they may become discouraged, or they may become fearful, and so they back away and return to the ways of the world. They don't understand that they have lost their fruit and that they've only been given a certain amount of time here. We are running a race against the clock, to bear the fruit of Jesus Christ. We don't want to waste our time in the things of the world and in feeding our flesh, but in feeding our spiritual man the Word of God, the very thing that causes him to grow up into the Image of Jesus Christ. Father, we pray and ask for Your mercy in this regard, that You would grant repentance.

Lord, for those who aren't filled with Your Spirit, which is Your power in them, I pray that You will cause them to read the book of Acts and see what it is to be truly filled with the Spirit, and to see they need the Spirit, the promise of the Father. If they're not walking in obedience, Lord, it is very likely that they have not received the Holy Spirit, because He gives the Holy Spirit to those who obey Him. In Jesus' Name, we want to be obedient and filled with Your

Spirit, we want to be empowered to walk as Jesus walked and as His disciples walked, Lord, and not in the vain ways of dead religion that has no power, whatsoever. Lord, bless us and grant us this grace, because it is much less likely someone will fall away when they are filled with the Spirit and, Lord, we know it's not just those who are filled with the Spirit, but those who obey the Spirit. Your Word says "for as many as are led by the Spirit of God, these are sons of God." These will not fall away. To be led of the Spirit is what we must do and what we must have.

We thank You, Father, for Your grace today. You've taught us that "whatsoever ye pray and ask for, believe that ye received them, and ye shall have them," so we're thanking You for empowering us, for filling us with Your Spirit, for teaching us how to hear Your voice. We know that "to whomsoever much is given, of him shall much be required: and to whom they commit much, of him will they ask the more." That means if we have the Holy Spirit but still continue to walk after the flesh, we'll die that much more responsible because we had the power and didn't use it. So we thank You, Father, for Your blessings to us, for granting us grace and granting us to understand if we're in a back-slidden, fallen situation, to repent and confess our sins. You're powerful. You give grace to the humble, Lord.

Lord, I just ask that You would convict us to be diligent to have prayer partners and to hold ourselves responsible and to confess our sins, because You said that if we confess our sins, You are "faithful and just to forgive us and to cleanse us of all unrighteousness." That's a powerful promise. It takes some humility, and pride or fear of rejection can keep us from doing it, or even fear that someone won't be accepting of us if they believe we're not perfect,

but that's foolishness. Father, we thank You for Your mercy toward us, we thank You for Your grace and that You are drawing us unto Yourself like the Shulamite in the Song of Solomon. She said, "Draw us and we will run after Thee." Father, this is what we ask: We ask that You draw us and give us a hunger and a thirst for righteousness that will be filled so that we can be pleasing in Your sight, Lord. We depend upon Your mercy and Your grace, but we know that if we "hold fast the confession of our hope that it waver not," that we will have what You've promised, and we thank You for that, Lord, in Jesus' Name.

## CHAPTER THREE

### The Born-Again Soul

Father, thank You for giving wisdom, discernment, and understanding that motivates us to holiness, so that we may escape this great falling-away that we know happens at this time, and have seen happening at this time. Thank You, Father, for Your grace and mercy towards us. In Jesus' Name, amen.

#### *Receiving the End of Your Faith*

Let's go back to what Peter said. **(1Pe.1:3) Blessed [be] the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to his great mercy begat** (That's the Greek *anagennaó*, meaning "to beget again" and it's a combination of *aná*, "up, again," and *gennáō*, "give birth," in other words, "born-again or born from on high.") **us again unto a living hope...** We were born-again unto a living hope, and when we were first born-again, it was our spirit that was born-again. The soul is born-again in a different manner, as we'll see. **(1Pe.1:3) Blessed [be] the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to his great mercy begat us again unto a living hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead.** It was a "living hope" because when He was resurrected, we were resurrected. However, that's by faith, and as we exercise faith in that promise, we receive the manifestation if we continue on in the faith. **(1Pe.1:5) Who by the power of God are guarded through faith unto a salvation ready to be revealed in the**

***last time.*** So you're guarded through your faith until you come to the salvation. You have to continue in the faith, as we studied. A person who doesn't continue in the faith, doesn't get what they've believed for, because Jesus said, ***(Mar.11:24) ... All things whatsoever ye pray and ask for, believe that ye received them, and ye shall have them.*** And, ***(Mat.10:22) ... he that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved.*** If you don't endure to the end, you will not be saved.

You have to endure in your faith to the end, knowing that your faith is going to be tested. ***(1Pe.1:6) Wherein ye greatly rejoice, though now for a little while, if need be, ye have been put to grief in manifold trials...*** We've already seen that the Greek there means "various temptations." You are going to be tempted. Your faith is going to be tested and you must hold fast the confession of your hope that it waver not (Hebrews 10:23). If you do that, you'll come to verse 9, which says, ***(1Pe.1:9) receiving the end of your faith, [even] the salvation of [your] souls.*** So the beginning of your faith is that born-again experience in verse 3, where you receive a born-again spirit; the end of your faith is the born-again soul. Now, obviously, what's been put into your spirit has to go into your soul, which is your mind, will, and emotions. That's where you bear the fruit. You're not the "good seed put into the ground" until you have that initial born-again experience of a born-again spirit. Then you're the good seed and then you have to bear fruit, because when the harvest comes, He's coming to pick the fruit. Some people don't endure to the end in order to bear fruit in their soul, and this is why the falling-away happens. The falling-away happens because most people don't think they have to bear fruit, which is,

“[Even] the salvation of [your] souls.” Glory to God!

With that in mind, we can continue. **(1Pe.1:21) Who through him are believers in God, that raised him from the dead, and gave him glory; so that your faith and hope might be in God. (22) Seeing ye have purified your souls in your obedience to the truth...** To whom was Peter speaking? If we back up to the beginning of his letter, we find he was speaking only to true believers. **(1Pe.1:1) Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the elect who are sojourners of the Dispersion...** He wasn't speaking to those who were just the called, but those who were the elect, because the elect are the ones who always bear fruit. **(Mat.22:14) For many are called, but few chosen.** “Chosen” is the Greek *eklektos*, meaning “select, by implication, favorite.” So you may truly be called and may have had a born-again spirit, but will you have a born-again soul? Will you go on to bear fruit in your mind, your will, and your emotions? This is how you make your calling and election sure (2 Peter 1:10). “Seeing ye have purified your souls,” means that you have to see the end from the beginning. You have to walk by faith. You have to believe it was done at the Cross. This is what you see in your spirit: you see it as done, as finished. **(Hebrews 10:14) For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified.**

**(1Pe.1:22) Seeing ye have purified your souls in your obedience to the truth** (If you don't want to fall away, you have to be obeying the truth, and for you to obey the truth, you have to search for truth, as we've already covered. You search for wisdom as gold {Job 28:16-17; Proverbs 3:14,16:16}.) **unto unfeigned love** (The most important thing is love. Many people prove that they do not love, and,

of course, they are in danger of falling away.) ***of the brethren, love one another from the heart fervently: (23) having been begotten again...*** That's the Greek word *anagennaó*, meaning "born-again, from above," and when you're first born-again, you don't know much about the Bible, but you don't have to. All you have to do is repent and want the Lord to take over your life. "Repent," which means "change your mind," and believe the first message you have of the Gospel. That's all you have to do, but, after that, as you search for the truth and obey the truth, you will have fruit in your soul. In other words, you'll be renewing your mind with the Mind of Christ, which will enable you to bear fruit by your faith in what you understand. God will give you power when you believe what you read. Some of you reading this might go to churches and might not get enough Word to overcome anything you've already been indoctrinated with. You need to get this on your own by searching out the truth. God's people will love the truth. All of the elect will love the truth and they will love Him enough to obey it.

***(1Pe.1:22) Seeing ye have purified your souls in your obedience to the truth unto unfeigned love of the brethren, love one another from the heart fervently: (23) having been begotten again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, through the word of God, which liveth and abideth.*** What is the "incorruptible seed"? It is the Word of God, and again, when you first come to the Lord, do you know the Word of God? No, you don't, but this is the second part of being born-again, and that is born-again in soul, "not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, through the word of God." You do have to seek the truth and you do have to obey the truth. You can obey the truth because you believe that you

were united with Him in the death, burial, and resurrection, and that your sins were taken away. **(Rom.6:5) For if we have become united with [him] in the likeness of his death, we shall be also [in the likeness] of his resurrection; (6) knowing this, that our old man was crucified with [him,] that the body of sin might be done away, that so we should no longer be in bondage to sin; (7) for he that hath died is justified from sin.** You can obey the truth because you believe the Gospel that you were made free from sin. **(Rom.6:22) But now being made free from sin and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto sanctification, and the end eternal life.** And, as you exercise faith in that, sin won't have power over you because you believe it's been conquered already. **(Joh.16:33) These things have I spoken unto you, that in me ye may have peace. In the world ye have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.**

**(1Pe.1:24) For, All flesh is as grass...** Now, we do go through this crucifixion of the old flesh, and when you receive the Word of God, you're obeying your spirit. That means you're not obeying your flesh, and it dies a little more each time you do that. You're weaning it. The flesh is used to getting its way, but you're weaning it. **(1Pe.1:24) For, All flesh is as grass, And all the glory thereof as the flower of grass. The grass withereth, and the flower falleth: (25) But the word of the Lord abideth for ever...** This Word, which you put in your heart, that is eternal life: "the Word of the Lord abideth forever." It is eternal. The "grass" or flesh is temporal, but this is eternal. We become the Word, made flesh, and that is **(Col.1:27) ... Christ in you, the hope of glory.**

*Do Not be Deceived! The Gospel is Conditional*

**(1Pe.1:25) But the word of the Lord abideth for ever. And this is the word of good tidings which was preached unto you.** This is the Gospel, not that other apostate teaching which says “just accept Jesus.” He doesn’t accept you unless you repent and believe, and that’s a continual process. It’s not a step-over-the-line, one-time profession that religion would have you believe. This “purifying of your soul” comes by obeying the truth, which is what James was talking about. **(Jam.1:21) Wherefore putting away all filthiness and overflowing of wickedness, receive with meekness the implanted** (This is the Greek *emphutos* and it means “inborn; innate; rooted.”) **word, which is able to save your souls.** (How? Through your obedience to the truth, as we just read.) **(22) But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deluding your own selves.** Many are deceived; multitudes of what are called “Christians” are deceived. They don’t think they have to walk in the truth. They think they can walk in the flesh, even though Paul said clearly, **(Rom.8:13) ... If ye live after the flesh, ye must die; but if by the Spirit ye put to death the deeds of the body, ye shall live.** There’s a condition there, “if.”

**(Jam.1:23) For if any one is a hearer of the word and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a mirror.** Beholding the “natural face” is contrary to what we are commanded to do. **(2Co.3:18) But we all** (That’s if we have “eyes to see”; some don’t.), **with unveiled face beholding as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, are transformed into the same**

**image from glory to glory, even as from the Lord the Spirit.** In other words, it's a gift from the spirit as you continue to behold. This is the Gospel: You don't live anymore; Jesus lives in you. **(Gal.2:20) I have been crucified with Christ; and it is no longer I that live, but Christ living in me: and that [life] which I now live in the flesh I live in faith, [the faith] which is in the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself up for me.** That's what Paul said. When you're looking in the mirror, you're seeing Jesus, because you accept this by faith. It's an imagination that you must hold on to so that you come into His Image more and more, "from glory to glory." You see Jesus in the mirror by faith because it's already done. **(Joh.3:13) And no one hath ascended into heaven, but he that descended out of heaven, [even] the Son of man, who is in heaven.** When you see your natural self in the mirror, or in other words, when you see your old "stinkin' self," you're not exercising any faith there. You're not calling **(Rom.4:17) ... the things that are not, as though they were.** There's no faith involved there, so how can you grow? How can you be anything more than what you are?

**(Jam.1:23) For if any one is a hearer of the word and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a mirror: (24) for he beholdeth himself, and goeth away, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was.** When people begin to look at "self" too much, they begin to fall into denial. It's the only way they can have any peace. When you read the Word, it tells you what God wants, and if you look in the mirror and say, "I don't want to look like that," you're not exercising the power of faith. You'll not overcome; you'll

always be a “hearer and not a doer.” (**Jam.1:25**) ***But he that looketh into the perfect law, the [law] of liberty, and so continueth*** (This is what we’ve been talking about.), ***being not a hearer that forgetteth but a doer that worketh, this man shall be blessed in his doing.*** Thank You, Father, for the Good News, the awesome, awesome Good News!

*God Wants You to Continue to the End!*

**(1Jn.3:9) Whosoever is begotten** (The Greek word is the same *gennaó* meaning “born.”) ***of God doeth no sin...*** When you have a renewed soul, a born-again soul, that is in the Image of Jesus because you held fast to the words your spirit received from God through the Word, then you’re going to overcome. Think about how many things you’ve overcome since you came to know the Lord, things you don’t even consider doing anymore and, if the devil tried to tempt you with them, you’d laugh at him. God wants to continue that all the way to the end. God wants to continue it until you have at least 30-, then 60-, and finally, 100-fold fruit. We discovered earlier, in the Parable of the Sower, that the seed you put in is the Seed of Jesus Christ, the Word of God. You must put the Word in there and you must obey it. There is a born-again man that is growing in you. He’s taking ground, he’s taking that Promised Land away from the old Canaanite, the old sinner in the land (Deuteronomy 4:38,7:1-6,22-26; etc.) He’s putting to death that old sinner and taking his house and living in his house (Deuteronomy 6:10,11, 19:1; Joshua 24:13; etc.) That’s what the spiritual man is doing. If you’re hearing and obeying the Word of God, you’re conquering this land.

The problem was that when the Israelites were going into their land, they forgot faith (Numbers 13:28-29, 14:1-4,30; etc.) They forgot what God said. Joshua and Caleb didn't forget; they kept reminding them (Numbers 13:30,14:38; etc.), but they wouldn't listen, so the Israelites died in their wilderness (Numbers 14:35; Hebrews 3:17; etc.), which is a warning to us.

### *We Will be Tested*

***(1Jn.3:9) Whosoever is begotten of God doeth no sin, because his seed abideth in him...*** That "seed" is the Word of God, but know that after you receive the initial born-again experience, you're going to be tested. Your faith is going to be tested, and if you give up the Seed and you accept what the devil says, guess what you're accepting? You're accepting the devil's seed. What does that end up being? A tare. You don't want to give up the Seed of God. It has the power to bring eternal life, manifestly, in your life. ***(1Jn.3:9) Whosoever is begotten of God doeth no sin, because his seed abideth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is begotten of God.*** The part of you that's born of God is not going to sin because it's God in you. That's where you have "Christ in you, the hope of glory," and that part of you is not going to sin, but there are other parts of your Promised Land that you haven't conquered yet. You haven't killed the old man, you haven't taken his house, you haven't raised your own crops on his property, and so on. You have to march through the whole Promised Land because God said that every place you put the sole of your foot, He's going to give it to you (Deuteronomy 11:24; Joshua 1:3). You already know the parts of you

that are born-again because you're not tempted in those areas anymore. God changed you and that wasn't an accident; you had faith.

***(1Jn.3:10) In this the children of God are manifest*** (Now we're talking about manifestation, and that's what we're here for, to manifest Christ.), ***and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.***

They are not of God. They are not doing what the Word tells us to do if we sin. ***(1Jn.1:7) But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus his Son cleanseth us from all sin. (8) If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. (9) If we confess our sins, he is faithful and righteous to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.*** When you sin, you can confess it and forsake it, and He will wash you clean. He will wash you of all unrighteousness, and that's part of your tools along the way to stay clean before God. If you're not going to confess your sin and you choose to justify yourself instead, then you won't be able to hold fast to your faith and you are going to fall away. It's a choice: You can just hide your sin around the people of God and make yourself acceptable to them as a deceiver, or you can confess your sin and God will cleanse you of all unrighteousness. Let's choose wisely to believe and confess and forsake this worldly way. Choose to accept that you've purified your soul in obedience to the truth. Choose to continue to obey the Truth so that you can go on to take that Promised Land and bear fruit in your soul, which is your mind, will, and emotions. Choose to allow the fiery trial to burn up that old "grass," which is the flesh (1 Peter 1:24).

**(1Pe.2:1) Putting away therefore all wickedness, and all guile, and hypocrisies...** Those who preach, “You’re always going to be a sinner, saved by grace,” are liars. They are anti-Christ and they’ve never even gotten a revelation of the Gospel. If you’re always going to be a sinner saved by grace, then you didn’t get saved by grace! Think about it: If you’re always going to be a sinner, you didn’t get saved by grace. Grace comes through your faith in the Word of God to save you from sin. God doesn’t save you so you can sin and get away with it; He comes to save you from sin because you confess it, you forsake it, and you want God. These people will be known because God is more important to them than sin, and that’s the trial. The church is full of hypocrisies and guile and deception by people **(Jud.1:12) ... who are hidden rocks in your love-feasts when they feast with you, shepherds that without fear feed themselves; clouds without water, carried along by winds; autumn leaves without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots.** Yes, they will be shown to be “twice dead, plucked up by the roots.” They’re full of guile and are hidden. They’re deceivers who want you to believe they’re somebody that they’re not. Instead of confessing their sins to someone who is faithful, or at least confessing them to the Lord, they’d rather deceive themselves, delude even themselves. There’s so much judgment coming out of these people, even though we’re not permitted to judge until we’re complete, until we’re delivered from sin (Matthew 7:1-2; 1 Corinthians 5:12; 2 Corinthians 10:6; etc.)

**(1Pe.2:1) Putting away therefore all wickedness, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil speakings, (2) as newborn babes, long for the spiritual milk which is without guile, that**

***ye may grow thereby unto salvation...*** What did Jesus tell His disciples? (***Joh.4:34***) ***Jesus saith unto them, My meat is to do the will of Him that sent me, and to accomplish his work.*** That's also true for all of us. Our "meat" is to do the Will of Him that sends us; our "meat" is to be a doer of the Word. How are we going to grow up only on milk? When Jesus was teaching the multitudes, He protested to them, (***Luk.6:46***) ***And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?*** We are growing unto the manifestation of our salvation. The manifestation is what you're looking for when you go out into the field to pick the fruit. You might believe that the seed is going to bring forth wonderful fruit, but you're not going to go out there to pick it until it's above the ground and you can see it. That's what we're here for; the earth is the field (Matthew 13:37-39) and we're here to bear fruit, but some people say you don't bear fruit until you go to heaven. Well, they're not going to heaven, because the fruit comes out of the earth. Fruit is attached to the earth before you pick it. Salvation is something that is in Jesus Christ (Acts 4:12). If you abide in Him, you have it (John 15:5). If you don't abide in Him, you don't have it (John 15:6). It's not something magical that happened to you when you first accepted Jesus. The test comes after that to find out if you're just called, or whether you're called and chosen (Matthew 22:14).

***(1Pe.2:3) If ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious: (4) unto whom coming, a living stone, rejected indeed of men*** (If you don't want to be rejected of men, you're going to do what it takes to make them happy, but it's more important to make God happy because He has eternal life for you.), ***but with God elect, precious, (5)***

***ye also, as living stones, are built up a spiritual house, to be a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices*** (When the priests offered sacrifices, what did they offer? They offered flesh, burnt flesh.), ***acceptable to God through Jesus Christ***. When you're in the fiery trial, you're making a decision. Do you want more of Jesus or do you want more of the flesh? If you obey the flesh, you get more of the flesh; if you obey Jesus, the flesh is crucified because it doesn't get what it wants. It's on the altar of fire and it's burned-up. This is how you get more of Jesus and bear more fruit. In the trial, which He said you are going to go through, you decide to obey the Word even though you can feel the old flesh drawing on you, and the devil beyond that. He's got his rope around the old flesh, pulling against you. You can feel it every time you're tested or tempted to do something other than obey the Word of God. The Word puts you on your cross. If you don't obey it, you're not on the cross. And if you don't take up your cross and follow Jesus, you're not His "disciple," which means "a learner and a follower" (Matthew 10:38,16:24; Mark 8:34; Luke 9:23, 14:27).

***(1Pe.2:6) Because it is contained in scripture, Behold, I lay in Zion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: And he that believeth on him shall not be put to shame***. How can you prove that you believe on Him? The Bible says, ***(Jam.2:26) ... even so faith apart from works is dead***. If you believe, if you have faith, you will act on your faith, but there are a lot of people who are going to be put to shame. ***(7) For you therefore that believe is the preciousness: but for such as disbelieve*** (It will be proven in the midst of the trial whether or not you believe.), ***The stone which the builders rejected...*** You may claim, "I never rejected Jesus," but

if you don't obey Him in the midst of the trial then you're not believing on Him. You've rejected the stone which the builders rejected, just like those early people did, and you're shamed right there; you're rejected. **(1Pe.2:7) For you therefore that believe is the preciousness: but for such as disbelieve, The stone which the builders rejected, The same was made the head of the corner; (8) and, A stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence; for they stumble at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed.** It's always the disobedient who stumble and fall away. They're disobedient because they're not believing the Word. They've made up a convenient doctrine so that they can live in the flesh and still go to heaven. Even people who know better can fall into the trap when they stumble on the Rock of offense, when they stumble over the Word of God. The Word comes to prove, to test, you. The Word comes to empower you with faith and deliver you. Like a two-edged sword, it will cut-away that which is fleshly and demonic. **(2Co.7:1) Having therefore these promises, beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all defilement of flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.**

**(1Pe.2:9) But ye are an elect race, a royal priesthood, a holy nation** (Paul is trying to convince them, after he just finished giving them the conditions here.), **a people for [God's] own possession, that ye may show forth the excellencies of him who called you out of darkness into his marvellous light.** You're called out of "darkness" to come into the Light of the Word, the Wisdom of God, and that "darkness" is the darkness of your unregenerate soul that's not born unto God. You see, parts of your soul are born unto God because you're

obedient to God there. You're not even tempted anymore in those areas, but there are parts of your soul where you're not obedient to God. Those places are where your Promised Land hasn't been taken away from the carnal man of the land, the "Canaanite." He must be put to death in order for you to take the land 30-, 60-, and 100-fold. The grace of God gives you the opportunity to do that. **(1Pe.2:10) Who in time past were no people, but now are the people of God...** How do you become the "people of God"? Well, when you're born-again, it's God, Himself, Who lives in you, and the part of you that obeys God is His Kingdom. That's where He rules, but the part of you that doesn't obey Him is not His Kingdom because He doesn't rule there. The more and more you obey, the more and more of you comes in to the Kingdom of God. **(1Pe.2:10) Who in time past were no people, but now are the people of God: who had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.** God is so good! We thank You so much, Father, for your mighty blessings!

**(1Pe.4:1) Forasmuch then as Christ suffered in the flesh...** Obviously, if you're being crucified and the old man is being put to death, it is painful. It is painful to give up the things that you have to give up in order to have Christ, but as the Bible says, **(2Co.4:16) Wherefore we faint not; but though our outward man is decaying, yet our inward man is renewed day by day.** If you don't let your outer-man decay, the inner-man is not renewed because they both occupy the same territory. Somebody's got to be losing the territory and somebody's got to be taking the territory. If you're not putting to death the "old man in the land," you're not taking the territory. Remember, the Israelites were told, "Take up your swords and go take your

Promised Land,” and that God would be with them. Every place they put the sole of their foot, God would give it to them. They were to take out the enemy everywhere they went. God said, “Don’t appease them; kill them.” That’s a type and a shadow of how your old man, your old life, has to die. It can’t be reformed.

***(1Pe.4:1) Forasmuch then as Christ suffered in the flesh, arm ye yourselves also with the same mind...*** You see, it’s a good thing to suffer in the flesh. When you deny yourself, when you take up your cross and follow Jesus, you will suffer in the flesh. A cross is a cross. Your “cross” is “obedience.” Jesus obediently went to His Cross and He even said that it was for this reason He came into the world (Matthew 16:21-22; Mark 8:31-32), but the disciples tried to talk Him out of going to His Cross (Matthew 16:23; Mark 8:33). Well, now we can see a parable there. Of course, there are many people who will try to talk you out of going to your cross, but Jesus said, “Get thee behind me, Satan,” and we ought to say the same thing (Matthew 4:10,16:23; Mark 8:33; Luke 4:8).

***(1Pe.4:1) Forasmuch then as Christ suffered in the flesh, arm ye yourselves also with the same mind; for he that hath suffered in the flesh hath ceased from sin*** (Consider “suffering in the flesh” to be “ceasing from sin.” If you don’t cease from sin, that means sin is going to rule you. If sin rules you, you’re going to fall away.); ***(2) that ye no longer should live the rest of your time in the flesh*** (Where? In heaven? No, on earth, because there is no flesh in heaven{1 Corinthians 15:50}.) ***to the lusts of men, but to the will of God.*** If you’re questioning, “David, is that really possible? Do you mean all these preachers lied to me about how I just have to accept my

forgiveness and go on sinning?” You need to read that verse again: “that ye no longer should live the rest of your time in the flesh to the lusts of men, but to the will of God.” And how do you do that? You do that by suffering in the flesh.

You have to say, “No!” to your flesh and you can do that since the Cross, because your old flesh was crucified there. ***(Gal.2:20) I have been crucified with Christ; and it is no longer I that live, but Christ living in me: and that [life] which I now live in the flesh I live in faith, [the faith] which is in the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself up for me.*** Jesus has ***(Col.1:13) ... delivered us out of the power of darkness, and translated us into the kingdom of the Son of his love.*** You don’t have to serve your flesh anymore, but if you believe you have to serve it, then you do. What did Jesus tell those two blind men as He was healing them? ***(Mat.9:29) Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it done unto you.*** What happened when the centurion asked Jesus to heal his servant? ***(Mat.8:13) And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way; as thou hast believed, [so] be it done unto thee. And the servant was healed in that hour.*** If you believe you’re going to be a sinner for the rest of your life, you’re going to be a sinner for the rest of your life, but you’re not going to heaven because you’re not going to bear any fruit. That’s not the Gospel. The Gospel ***(Rom.1:16) ... is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth...***

***(1Pe.4:3) For the time past may suffice to have wrought the desire of the Gentiles*** (In other words, he’s saying, “Yeah, you got away with it for a while.”), ***and to have walked in lasciviousness, lusts, winebib-***

**blings, revellings, carousings, and abominable idolatries: (4) wherein they think it strange that ye run not with [them] into the same excess of riot, speaking evil of you.** They do think it's strange that you don't run with them "into the same excess." Well, if you humble yourself to them and if you're really interested in impressing them, of course, you're going to get into the same things they're into and you're going to lose your salvation. I know some people teach that you won't lose your salvation, but we're seeing how ridiculous that is. The elect are not going to lose their salvation, but many of the called will. The elect are the chosen because they bear fruit. Those people running in the "excess of riot" don't understand that they will eventually have to answer to God. **(1Pe.4:5) Who shall give account to him that is ready to judge the living and the dead.** The Lord will judge the living and the dead. If you continue on in your riotous living, doing everything the way you want to do it and not putting to death the sin, you will fall away. You cannot go to heaven because you would ruin it. That's just the truth.

**(1Pe.4:17) For the time [is come] for judgment to begin at the house of God...** Yes, God uses the wicked to judge the house of God, and then God judges the wicked. That's His method, because somebody has to put you on your cross. The apostate people of God and the Romans, these put Jesus on the Cross. You need to walk in the judgment of God. That old flesh needs to die. You need to suffer the loss of self because self cannot go to heaven. "Self," which is synonymous with "soul" in the Scripture, is not going to heaven; it has to die here. Every seed that goes into the ground is put to death by the dirt around that seed, but

then life comes out and starts bearing fruit. There has to be a death before a life. So this judgment begins at the house of God because you have to have time to bear fruit before your time is up. That's why it's called a "race." (**Heb.12:1**) ***Therefore let us also, seeing we are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us, (2) looking unto Jesus the author and perfecter of [our] faith, who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising shame, and hath sat down at the right hand of the throne of God.*** You're racing against the clock to bear fruit before your time is up.

***(1Pe.4:17) For the time [is come] for judgment to begin at the house of God:and [if it] begin first at us, what [shall be] the end of them that obey not the gospel of God? (18) And if the righteous is scarcely saved*** (That's the Greek word *molis* and it means "only with difficulty; very rarely."), ***where shall the ungodly and sinner appear?*** Wow! If you're going to be a sinner for the rest of your life, it doesn't look good there, does it? How about the righteous? The righteous are doing much better. There's not as many of them because they're "scarcely" saved, but there are lots of sinners, and you're either in one camp or the other. (**1Pe.4:19**) ***Wherefore let them also that suffer according to the will of God commit their souls in well-doing unto a faithful Creator.*** God is trying to create your soul into the Image of Jesus Christ, and how does it happen? We just discovered that it happens through your obedience to the truth, and the reason you can obey the truth is because you

have faith. If you have faith, you're going to have obedience because (**Jam.2:17**) ... ***faith, if it have not works, is dead in itself. (18) Yea, a man will say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: show me thy faith apart from [thy] works, and I by my works will show thee [my] faith.***

***(2Pe.1:1) Simon Peter, a servant and apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained a like precious faith with us in the righteousness of our God and [the] Saviour Jesus Christ: (2) Grace to you and peace be multiplied in the knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord.*** “Grace and peace be multiplied in the knowledge of God and Jesus our Lord.” How sad that so many people don't have time to search the Scriptures, don't make time to get the New Testament down in their heart! There are too many other things distracting them, but call to mind how the “seed” was destroyed in the Parable of the Sower: The distractions of life is why those who heard did not continue on to bear fruit (Matthew 13:22; Mark 4:19).

***(2Pe.1:2) Grace to you and peace be multiplied in the knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord; (3) seeing*** (This means “seeing by faith.”) ***that his divine power hath granted*** (It's past tense, meaning that it's already done, He's already given you this.) ***unto us all things that pertain unto life...*** That word in the Greek is *zōé*, which means “life, both of physical (present) and of spiritual (particularly future) existence.” *Strong's* goes on to say, “it always (only) comes from and is sustained by God's self-existent life. The Lord intimately shares His gift of life with people, creating each in His image which gives all the capacity to know His eternal life.” This is God's Life.

It's not your old, soulish life, which is *psuché*. *Zóé* is the higher life that you get when you give up the *psuché*, the lower life, the self-life. He's giving you "all things that pertain to life and godliness." He did this at the Cross. You can have grace and peace multiplied to you when you believe on this, when you apply it in your life. **(2Pe.1:3) Seeing that his divine power hath granted unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that called us by his own glory and virtue.** You have to know what God has given to you and then you have to exercise faith in it. You have faith in God and God will rise up in you and do the work. Thank God it's by faith and not our own self-efforts!

**(2Pe.1:4) Whereby he hath granted unto us his precious and exceeding great promises; that through these ye may become partakers of the divine nature** (If you're going to live a godly life, you need the divine nature, and the promises are what give you this divine nature.), **having escaped from the corruption that is in the world by lust.** You must escape the "corruption that is in the world by lust" or you will have a falling-away, because God doesn't want this in heaven. The Greek word *epithumia*, which is translated as "lust," means simply "desire, eagerness for, inordinate desire." The "lusts" are those "desires of the flesh," and the Bible says, **(Rom.8:13) For if ye live after the flesh, ye must die** (That's a falling-away.); **but if by the Spirit ye put to death the deeds of the body** (Those are the acts of the flesh.), **ye shall live.** We need to put the promises into our hearts in order to partake of the divine nature so that the corruption does not overcome us. Otherwise, we're falling away. God instructed Moses, **(Exo.16:4) ...**

***Behold, I will rain bread from heaven*** (Jesus said that He was that manna that came down out of heaven {John 6:35,48,51}.) ***for you; and the people shall go out and gather a day's portion every day, that I may prove them*** (God was testing them to see if they would be obedient to Him and get their daily portion of manna.), ***whether they will walk in my law, or not.*** People like to belittle the necessity of spending time in the Word every day, but that is exactly what God expects you to do. He expects you to be obedient and to eat the Word daily, just like they gathered and ate the manna in the wilderness daily. You're being proven; your obedience is being tested. Oh, you can go party. You can even go party with a lot of Christians. You can go live after all the lusts of your flesh, but that's not why you're here. You're here to deny yourself, take up your cross, and follow Him.

***(2Pe.1:5) Yea, and for this very cause adding on your part all diligence, in your faith...*** There's not supposed to be any comma behind "diligence," it should be behind "faith." You're "diligent in your faith" because you can't add anything. You can't be diligent in any of the attributes that He's getting ready to mention here. You have to use the faith that God has given to you, and if you haven't been given faith, you're not saved. Inside faith are all these other attributes, which are all given to you because of your faith. In a lot of Bible translations it's "adding to, adding to," but that's not correct according to both the original language and the numeric pattern. These attributes are like those nesting dolls, or one of those little toy eggs that you open up and there's another, smaller egg inside, and you open that up and there's another egg inside.

***(2Pe.1:5) Yea, and for this very cause adding on***

***your part all diligence in your faith, supply virtue; and in [your] virtue knowledge; (6) and in [your] knowledge self-control (Some people don't believe in self-control. They think they can't be controlled, and if you don't feed your spiritual man, that will be true, because he's not going to be able to control you.); and in [your] self-control patience... He wants patience to have its perfect work. (Jam.1:4) And let patience have [its] perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, lacking in nothing.***

***(2Pe.1:5) Yea, and for this very cause adding on your part all diligence in your faith, supply virtue; and in [your] virtue knowledge; (6) and in [your] knowledge self-control; and in [your] self-control patience; and in [your] patience godliness; (7) and in [your] godliness brotherly kindness; and in [your] brotherly kindness love. God wants love from His people, love for one another. If you don't have that, you're not going to make it to heaven. (8) For if these things are yours and abound, they make you to be not idle nor unfruitful (Of course not, because this is fruit, the fruit of God! What a blessing!) unto the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. In other words, knowledge begets knowledge. It started out with knowledge.***

If you exercise faith in the promises of God, you receive of His divine Nature. So because you believe that you were crucified with Christ, because you believe that your old man was put to death when you were “buried” in baptism as an act of faith, then the old man is dead and the One Who came up from the water is Jesus, not you. ***(Joh.12:24) Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a grain of***

**wheat fall into the earth and die, it abideth by itself alone; but if it die, it beareth much fruit.** If the Seed is the Word of Jesus, what is the fruit? It's the fruit of Jesus. It's not gaining souls, it's gaining your own soul. Certainly, if you gain your own soul, you'll be able to be useful in gaining other souls, but you can't give away what you don't have.

**(1Pe.1:8) For if these things are yours and abound, they make you to be not idle nor unfruitful unto the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. (9) For he that lacketh these things is blind...** He's "blind" because he doesn't see correctly. He sees only his natural face in the mirror. He doesn't look in there and see Jesus. He doesn't behold in the mirror the glory of the Lord (2 Corinthians 3:18). **(1Pe.1:8) For if these things are yours and abound, they make you to be not idle nor unfruitful unto the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. (9) For he that lacketh these things is blind, seeing only what is near** (And that's just his own, ugly face.), **having forgotten the cleansing from his old sins.** Have you forgotten that you were cleansed of your sins? Just like Jesus bore your sicknesses, you have to believe your sins were borne by Jesus (Isaiah 53:5; 1 Peter 2:24). You don't have a problem with sin; you have a problem with unbelief. The problem of sin has been dealt with, so your problem is unbelief, but if we want the grace of God, we have to walk by faith. **(Eph.2:8) For by grace have ye been saved through faith; and that not of yourselves, [it is] the gift of God; (9) not of works, that no man should glory. (10) For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus for good works, which God afore prepared that we should**

**walk in them.** This recreation of your soul into the Image of Jesus Christ, from glory to glory, is happening as you walk by faith. Did you forget that your sins were taken away? Why are you lending your body to sin? You will die; you will fall away. Three out of four do, according to the Parable of the Sower. Don't forget you were cleansed from your old sins. Does that mean you can continue to walk in them? No, because when you walk by faith that you are cleansed of them, you are not going to give yourself over to them since God is going to give you grace. "By grace have ye been saved through faith."

**(1Pe.1:10) Wherefore, brethren, give the more diligence to make your calling and election sure...** The word, "calling" there is the Greek *klésis* and it means "invitation; in the New Testament, always of a divine call." The word for "election" is the Greek *eklogé* and it means "a choosing out, selecting, choice (by God)." So since you were born-again in your spirit, you now have a divine invitation from Him "who saved us and called us," but notice that you also have to make certain you will be among those whom God chooses, because that calling means an invitation to partake of everything that Christ is. What happened in the Parable of the Banquet when the king's servants went out and called people to the marriage feast? **(Mat.22:11) But when the king came in to behold the guests, he saw there a man who had not on a wedding-garment: (12) and he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding-garment? And he was speechless. (13) Then the king said to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and cast him out into the outer darkness; there shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth. (14) For**

**many are called, but few chosen.** The “wedding garment” is your works of righteousness (Revelation 19:8). **(Rom.13:14) But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.** Put on Jesus! Put on your “Wedding Garment” “to make your calling and election sure.”

**(1Pe.1:10) Wherefore, brethren, give the more diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never stumble** (Which is another way of saying, “you will never fall away.”): **(11) for thus shall be richly supplied unto you the entrance...** You may be thinking, “Whoa! I thought I entered way back there when I was baptized.” Well, as you “do these things,” you are progressively entering into the eternal Kingdom because you are progressively taking more and more of your Promised Land, which is where God rules. That’s how you enter the Kingdom. **(1Pe.1:11) For thus shall be richly supplied unto you the entrance into the eternal kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.** The preachers have lied to us a lot about this. Many think they entered “the eternal kingdom” when they shook the preacher’s hand, who told them, “That’s all you need to do. Now just go sit down in a pew and wait for the rapture,” but they lied, and they don’t know what they’re talking about. They’ve not been a partaker in bearing this fruit because they didn’t read the Word; they just accepted what their dead religion said and passed it on to you. The Bible calls it “leaven.” **(Mat.16:6) And Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees.**

Father, we ask that You keep these things in our mind, and that we be given this gift to always seek out Your Word

day-by-day to learn and grow, and receive the Word of God into our hearts where it can give root to that seed so that we can bear fruit. Father, this is wonderful! Lord, we love you and love to read Your Word. We love to know what it is to be righteous, what it is to be truly born-again in spirit, soul, and ultimately, body, for those who are born-again in soul. Lord, we thank You, Father, for the gift of Jesus Christ, because when we look in the mirror, we don't see a sinner; we see a sinner that's been saved by grace. "Saved" is Jesus. We accept Jesus: We accept the reconciliation, the exchange, of His Life for our life.

We give up our life, daily, Lord. It's been nailed on the Cross, it's been buried in baptism, and we accept the Life of Christ, daily, because as the outer man is decaying, the inner man is being renewed day by day. Every day, Lord, let us give up the old man to death in the fiery trial on the altar of burnt offering. We have a continual burnt offering according to type, so Lord, help us every day to deny ourselves and to let the old fiery trial burn-up the old man. Help us every day to more and more take his place, plant crops on his land, and take his house, take away from him this house that we're walking in. Lord, we win, because Jesus won. We need to just keep on believing that, keep on believing these awesome promises and accept the fact that we don't live anymore: Christ lives in us. And the life that we now live, we live by the faith of the Son of God, Who loved us and gave Himself for us, as Galatians 2:20 says. Oh, thank You, Father, thank You for this awesome and miraculous work!

And Lord, in Second Peter 1, verse 19, it says that we have the word of prophecy made more sure whereunto you do well to take heed as unto a lamp, shining in a dark place. And Proverbs 20:27 says the spirit of man is the

lamp of the Lord. And it is shining in the dark place of our soul, until the day dawn and the Day Star arise in our heart. That's the manifestation of our salvation: Christ in you, the hope of Glory! O, Thank You, Father, thank You for Your awesome gift to us. We believe You, Lord. We're no longer going to look in the mirror and see that old man. We thank You that we're washed clean. We're going to humble ourselves and confess our sins, for You give grace to the humble, but the proud You resist. Thank You, Father. In Jesus' Name, amen.

## CHAPTER FOUR

### The Promise is to and in Christ

#### *Having Spiritual Eyes to See*

Father, we ask You in Jesus' Name to give wisdom and the fear of the Lord to Your people. We have discovered that the falling-away is great, a very high percentage of God's people. In the Parable of the Sower, three out of four mentioned by Jesus who heard the Word, fell away from it. So, Lord, we ask that people take this seriously and pay attention to what You're saying, pay attention to Your mighty warnings that are all the way through the Scripture. Thank You, Lord. Amen.

I'm going to begin with a brief review of our study in Peter concerning how to keep from falling away. **(2Pe.1:1) *Simon Peter, a servant and apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained a like precious faith*** (So this is talking about believers.) ***with us in the righteousness of our God and [the] Saviour Jesus Christ: (2) Grace to you and peace be multiplied in the knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord.*** Knowledge can keep you from falling away because grace and peace are multiplied through knowledge. You can't fall away if you have "grace," which is the "unmerited favor of God." People lose the favor of God and that's why they fall away, but by faith, which you receive through grace, is how you keep it. **(2Pe.1:3) *Seeing that his divine power hath granted unto us*** (This is the Gospel, that it's al-ready been done.) all things that pertain unto **life** (That word is *zoe*, which we've learned is God's Life, as opposed to

*psuche*, which is the soulish life.) **and godliness, through the knowledge of him that called us by his own glory and virtue.** That makes knowledge very important. The Bible says, **(Pro.3:13) Happy is the man that findeth wisdom, And the man that getteth understanding. (14) For the gaining of it is better than the gaining of silver, And the profit thereof than fine gold.** Seek wisdom as gold, seek knowledge.

**(2Pe.1:4) Whereby he hath granted unto us his precious and exceeding great promises; that through these ye may become partakers of the divine nature...** We've seen that the "divine nature" is the 30-, 60-, and 100-fold fruit of the Life of Christ. He was the Sower Who sowed the Seed. The Seed was His Word that went into their hearts in order to bring forth fruit, but three out of the four groups who heard the Word did not go on to bear fruit. Only one out of the four bore fruit (Matthew 13:3-9,18-23; Mark 4:1-9,13-20; Luke 8:4-15). And, of course, the partakers of the divine nature do so through the knowledge of these promises. The most important thing you can do is read the New Testament. And he goes on to say, **(2Pe.1:4) Whereby he hath granted unto us his precious and exceeding great promises; that through these ye may become partakers of the divine nature, having escaped from the corruption that is in the world by lust.** If you don't have any corruption because you sought the knowledge of God, since it was important to you, and it brought you into the fruit of the divine nature, then how can you fall away? It's not going to happen.

**(2Pe.1:5) Yea, and for this very cause adding on your part all diligence[,] in your faith...** Remember there is no comma behind "diligence." There was no punc-

tuation in the original manuscripts and all the punctuation was put in there by theologians. God wants you to be diligent in your faith. Faith is the very first attribute. You have to be diligent to use this gift of faith that you have been given. **(2Pe.1:5) Yea, and for this very cause adding on your part all diligence in your faith, supply virtue; and in [your] virtue knowledge...** Notice again that these are all wrapped up in faith. So inside your faith will come this gift of virtue, and in your virtue, knowledge. Each succeeding attribute of Christ mentioned here is found inside the previous attribute. The example given in the previous chapter is that it's like one of those little toy eggs you open up only to find another egg inside it, and when you open that one up there's still another inside it, and so on. Some Scripture versions don't translate this that way, but that's what the original says. All these attributes are inside of faith. If you have faith and you exercise faith, you are going to receive all the benefits of salvation, which include these attributes but first, of course, you need to know what to exercise faith for.

**(2Pe.1:6) And in [your] knowledge self-control** (Some people think that they're not able to control themselves because they don't know that this gift has been given to them in faith through the knowledge of the Word.); **and in [your] self-control patience** (James says we are to {Jam.1:4} ... *let patience have its perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, lacking in nothing.*); **and in [your] patience godliness; (7) and in [your] godliness brotherly kindness; and in [your] brotherly kindness love. (8) For if these things are yours and abound, they make you to be not idle nor unfruitful unto the knowledge of our Lord Jesus**

***Christ.*** Coming to know the Lord starts with knowledge of the Word. You bear fruit because you exercise faith in the knowledge of the Word, the promises, and you take on His divine Nature. This is what it is to come to know the Lord. ***(2Pe.1:9) For he that lacketh these things is blind, seeing only what is near*** (When Scripture talks about seeing things that are near and about being “near-sighted,” this is when you don’t see off into the future, you don’t see the end from the beginning.), ***having forgotten the cleansing from his old sins.*** Do you know your sins were taken away? When you were baptized with Christ (Romans 6:3), you were made free from sin (Romans 6:18,22), if you’re exercising faith in it.

James also speaks about seeing things that are “near.” ***(Jas.1:21) Wherefore putting away all filthiness and overflowing of wickedness, receive with meekness the implanted word*** (The word for “implanted” is “in-born.” Just like in the Seed in the Parable of the Sower, the Word goes into your heart and it bears fruit.), ***which is able to save your souls.*** We’ve talked about the saving of the spirit and the saving of the soul, and that those who are saved in soul, or “bear fruit” in their soul, will receive a new body. Of course, he’s speaking to believers here (James 1:1-2). ***(Jas.1:22) But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deluding your own selves. (23) For if any one is a hearer of the word and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a mirror...*** So he’s “near-sighted”; he sees only what is physical in this world. He doesn’t see the gift from heaven, which is ***(Col.1:27) ... Christ in you, the hope of glory.*** Someone who sees his natural face in the mirror is someone who is a hearer of the Word and not a doer. In

other words, he's not bearing any fruit of the Word. He will fall away.

Seeing your natural face is the opposite of faith. If Paul taught us to say, "It's no more I that live, but Christ that lives in me (Galatians 2:20)," then you look in the mirror by faith and you imagine that you see Jesus. That's how faith works. And Scripture also says that, **(2Co.3:18) ... we all, with unveiled face beholding as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, are transformed into the same image from glory to glory, even as from the Lord the Spirit.** That's bearing fruit! People who only see their natural face and bemoan themselves because they know what the Scripture says, but they don't know how to get there so they try to pick themselves up by their own bootstraps and fail, those people are trying to gain salvation by works and it won't happen. But you can see Jesus in the mirror if you accept that He made reconciliation when you came up from your baptism, that He bore your sins away on that Cross and gave you His Life, that the One Who lives that resurrection life in you now is Jesus. Anyone who sees only their natural face in the mirror is seeing only who they are now, and what they are now, and what a failure they are now, and on and on, but you can't have faith and condemnation at the same time. The devil loves to conquer people through a spirit of condemnation because there's no faith in condemnation. **(Jas.1:24) For he beholdeth himself, and goeth away, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was. (25) But he that looketh into the perfect law, the [law] of liberty, and [so] continueth, being not a hearer that forgetteth but a doer that worketh, this man shall be blessed in his doing. (26) If any man thinketh himself to be**

***religious, while he bridleth not his tongue but deceiveth his heart, this man's religion is vain.***

With that background, we can return to our original text. ***(2Pe.1:9) For he that lacketh these things is blind, seeing only what is near*** (The person who sees only the natural, the “nearer” things, is spiritually blind.), ***having forgotten the cleansing from his old sins.*** You need to remember that you were cleansed of your sins. That person doesn't live anymore, so you don't have the problem of seeing your natural face in the mirror. You died with Christ (Galatians 2:20), as the Bible says, and that's the “good confession” (1 Timothy 6:12-13). That's the Gospel and if you don't hold to the Gospel, you will fall away, because salvation is not going to be by man's works; it's going to be by faith in God. God is the One Who does this in us. He does it for free, but He does it for faith, and He's given you a gift of faith to get you there (Ephesians 2:5).

***(2Pe.1:10) Wherefore, brethren, give the more diligence to make your calling and election sure...*** Jesus said, ***(Mat.22:14) For many are called, but few chosen.*** If you are called, that means you were *kaleo*, you were “invited.” We are invited to partake of the benefits of Jesus Christ until we come into His Image. ***(2Co.3:18) But we all, with unveiled face beholding as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, are transformed into the same image from glory to glory, even as from the Lord the Spirit.*** We are invited to partake of that.

### *How Do We Make Our Calling Sure?*

Peter said to be diligent to “make your calling and election sure” because the Greek word *eklektos*, which is trans-

lated as “election,” means “chosen.” Not everyone, of the many who are called, is chosen, and we’ve seen this is true in the Parable of the Sower. Of course, when the Master comes to inspect His field, He’s coming to pick the “fruit.” The fruit is the new, born-again man from heaven. He’s not coming to pick the stalk or the plant, and He doesn’t want the dirt. He wants the fruit, and those are the ones who are chosen. **(2Pe.1:10) Wherefore, brethren, give the more diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never stumble.** So you don’t fall away if you do these things, and notice that this was all given to you as a free gift from God. You don’t have to walk in sin anymore. This is what faith is and this is what the Gospel is, although many have forgotten or don’t understand what the Gospel is.

**(2Pe.1:10) Wherefore, brethren, give the more diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never stumble:(11) for thus shall be richly supplied unto you the entrance into the eternal kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.** Most people think they entered the Kingdom when they first got saved. Well, when you first got saved, only your spirit entered the Kingdom but if you don’t bear fruit in your soul, your soul won’t enter the Kingdom and that’s where the great falling-away comes in. It’s the people who don’t bear fruit. Notice this says “entrance into the eternal kingdom,” so where do we enter into the Kingdom? It’s here and it’s now that we enter into the Kingdom. It’s not up somewhere in the starry sky that you enter into the Kingdom. The Kingdom is where God rules, and when you “do these things,” God rules in you. **(Luk.17:20) And being asked by the Pharisees,**

***when the kingdom of God cometh, he*** (This is Jesus speaking.) ***answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with observation: (21) neither shall they say, Lo, here! or, There! for lo, the kingdom of God is within you.*** Are you looking up in the sky for it? No, that's not where you enter it; you enter it here and now, through bearing the fruit of Jesus Christ, through the dominion of God over you. That's how you enter it, and that's how you will not fall away.

Yet even though "the entrance into the eternal kingdom" is being offered to them, most so-called "Christians" will reject this because they won't read the Scriptures for themselves but, instead, they've put their trust in man. There are many false prophets out there who are ready to deceive you into thinking that you just shake a preacher's hand and you're "in." No, this is a lying, anti-Christ spirit, there to deceive. ***(2Pe.2:1) But there arose false prophets also among the people, as among you also there shall be false teachers, who shall privily bring in destructive heresies, denying even the Master that bought them*** (They do deny Christ because they deny the Word of God, Who is Christ.), ***bringing upon themselves swift destruction.*** True! These people don't know where their end is because they shouldn't have been teachers in the first place. They went to some bible college, like all the Pharisees and Sadducees did, and they got their certificate, and they think this made them qualified. But Jesus said, ***(Rev.2:26) ... he that overcometh, and he that keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give authority over the nations.*** And having "authority" is having "dominion." These false prophets have knowledge, but it's false knowledge, and that's why these are false prophets.

**(2Pe.2:2) And many shall follow their lascivious doings** (In other words, they're "licentious"; they use their freedom to do whatever they want to do and many are following them. Many are going to take the mark of the beast.); **by reason of whom the way of the truth shall be evil spoken of.** Yes, so much so, that the world does not respect Christianity because of the corruption that's in it, corruption that shouldn't be there if a person knew the Gospel and followed what we just read in 2 Peter 1. There's much corruption there, especially from the very top. **(2Pe.2:3) And in covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you** (Those false prophets make money off of God's people while they're teaching things they ought not. And they inflate their ego off of God's people because they're little kings.): **whose sentence now from of old lingereth not, and their destruction slumbereth not.** **(4) For if God spared not angels when they sinned, but cast them down to hell, and committed them to pits of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment** (In other words, if He did it to the angels, He will do it to you, too.); **(5) and spared not the ancient world, but preserved Noah with seven others, a preacher of righteousness** (It's sobering to think about that many people just gone forever.), **when he brought a flood upon the world of the ungodly** (And yet Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord {Genesis 6:8}.); **(6) and turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, having made them an example** (God wants examples. He put them in the Bible for us to fear before Him.) **unto those that should live ungodly; (7) and delivered righteous Lot, sore**

***distressed by the lascivious life of the wicked (8) (for that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with their lawless deeds): (9) the Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptation...*** Yes, you can depend upon Him to strengthen you and empower you to walk away from temptation because He delivered you at the Cross.

### *There is No Covering for Willful Disobedience*

However, if you walk in willful disobedience, or, in other words, if you know what's right but you're going to sin anyway, then you're going to be judged. There's no way out of it, you don't have a sacrifice. ***(Heb.10:26) For if we sin willfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more a sacrifice for sins, (27) but a certain fearful expectation of judgment, and a fierceness of fire which shall devour the adversaries.*** You see, failure is one thing; willful disobedience is another. With failure, you can repent and confess your sin and escape the penalty, for your will is to do right. If you have been willfully disobedient, you need to repent and turn back to God quickly so the penalty will be less, because these willful sins are sins unto death (1 John 5:16:17). They will take you down the road of death, which can be manifested as a measure of, or even the fullness of, spiritual death or physical death or both. ***(2Pe.2:9) The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptation, and to keep the unrighteous under punishment unto the day of judgment...*** There are people who are living under a

curse but they still think they're righteous because they "accepted Jesus" or something that makes them feel justified. Apostle Paul warns us about this very thing. **(Rom.8:13) For if ye live after the flesh, ye must die; but if by the Spirit ye put to death the deeds of the body, ye shall live.**

**(2Pe.2:9) The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptation, and to keep the unrighteous under punishment unto the day of judgment; (10) but chiefly them that walk after the flesh in the lust of defilement, and despise dominion.** The unrighteous won't submit to real authority. When Jesus came, of course, that was Him. When He raised up His disciples, it was them. These people were real authority because the Word of God lived in them, but the religious crowd, those who stood upon pomp and other things, such as the name of the denomination they belonged to, all lost it. It's no different today. **(Ecc.1:9) That which hath been is that which shall be; and that which hath been done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the sun.**

**(2Pe.2:9) The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptation, and to keep the unrighteous under punishment unto the day of judgment; (10) but chiefly them that walk after the flesh in the lust of defilement, and despise dominion. Daring, self-willed, they tremble not to rail at dignities.** People have done this throughout history. Throughout the Bible, they always railed at "dignities," or "glories," as the Greek word *dóksa* actually means. The "glories" are the 30-, 60-, and 100-fold manifestation of Christ in you. They are the star-glories, moon-glories, and sun-glories (1

Corinthians 15:35-41) who are manifesting fruit. The unrighteous, who don't have any fruit, are railing at the people who do have fruit, or else they wouldn't be railing at them. **(2Pe.2:11) Whereas angels, though greater in might and power, bring not a railing judgment against them before the Lord.** (Angels certainly could do it if it were a right thing to do. They could do it very easily because they obviously serve God and the people that they're attempting to bring into the Kingdom do not.) **(12) But these, as creatures without reason, born mere animals to be taken and destroyed** (These are God's words.), **railing in matters whereof they are ignorant...** People can be very self-righteous. They want to defend their flesh, they love doctrines that enable them to live in sin, and they don't like people who are holy because holy people convict them. Self-righteous people don't want to be convicted because then they have to give up their sin and they don't want to be held responsible to give up their sin.

### *Lust of Flesh Makes Falling-away Inevitable*

**(2Pe.2:12) But these, as creatures without reason, born mere animals to be taken and destroyed, railing in matters whereof they are ignorant, shall in their destroying surely be destroyed** (You don't have to do anything against these people, they destroy themselves. They're among those in the great falling-away.), **(13) suffering wrong as the hire of wrong-doing; [men] that count it pleasure to revel in the daytime, spots and blemishes** (Of course, God is choosing a Bride without "spot" or "blemish" {Song of Solomon 4:7; Ephesians 5:27; 2 Peter 3:14; etc.}, and these have noth-

ing to do with it. The spots and blemishes are their sins.), **revelling in their deceivings while they feast with you.** There are so many people out there with a spirit of rejection! They want to see themselves as someone who is right and perfect, and woe be unto anyone who convicts them or corrects them. Because of their rejection, they've opened themselves up to unforgiveness, criticism, faction, and witchcraft. They're just plain mean, exactly as they were throughout the Bible. Their forefathers throughout the Bible persecuted the prophets and the righteous people. History always repeats and you can see the same thing is happening today.

**(2Pe.2:14) Having eyes full of adultery...** I can't tell you how many of the people who fell into the faction had spirits of lust and adultery, and even homosexuality! It was because they judged others who were righteous when they themselves were not, and so they were hiding their sins. God turned them over to some of the nastiest sins you can imagine and He's done that throughout history. **(Mat.7:2) For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured unto you.** This verse is talking about judging others. When you judge someone, you're going to be judged with what measure you judge them. God is quite able to bring people down who think that they are God and that they are the judge. You can show them all the Scripture verses in an effort to convict them, but it won't make any difference, because when God has turned you over to sin, you're turned over.

**(2Pe.2:14) Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin; enticing unstedfast souls; having a heart exercised in covetousness** (This is

so true. These people are thieves. If given a chance to steal from you, they will do it.); ***children of cursing...*** We've been warned by the Lord many times about the witchcraft people sending curses towards us, and we just cast them down in the Name of Jesus because what they sow, they reap. What they do is coming back upon them. ***(2Pe.2:14) Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin; enticing unstedfast souls; having a heart exercised in covetousness; children of cursing; (15) forsaking the right way, they went astray, having followed the way of Balaam the son of Beor, who loved the hire of wrong-doing...*** In other words, Balaam had lusts, and when he was offered something that he really wanted, he was willing to do wrong to get it. It's the same with Christians today. They make their doctrines up, they'll say, "God told me to do it," they'll do anything they can do to get what they want. They're being bribed by sin, bribed by lust, to do wrong. Of course, God was very angry with Balaam (Numbers 22:22-35). His donkey had more sense. ***(2Pe.2:15) Forsaking the right way, they went astray, having followed the way of Balaam the son of Beor, who loved the hire of wrong-doing; (16) but he was rebuked for his own transgression: a dumb ass spake with man's voice and stayed the madness*** (This is the Greek word *paraphronia* meaning "folly; insane {irrational} behavior, describing someone acting "out of their mind.") ***of the prophet.*** Balaam was certainly out of his mind because he didn't realize that a donkey was talking to him.

***(2Pe.2:17) These are springs without water*** (There's no true Word in them.), ***and mists driven by a storm; for whom the blackness of darkness hath***

**been reserved.** (God knew of them from the foundation of the world. He knows what He uses them as, which is vessels of dishonor, and He has reserved a place for them.) **(18) For, uttering great swelling [words] of vanity, they entice in the lusts of the flesh, by lasciviousness** (This is a “license to do whatever you want to do” and the true Word does not permit that.), **those who are just escaping from them that live in error** (They’re deceiving those who sometimes go from error to error.); **(19) promising them liberty, while they themselves are bondservants of corruption; for of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he also brought into bondage.** The Harlot is held guilty for the blood of the saints and of the prophets (Revelation 16:6,17:6,18:24). Not only did they kill the saints and prophets, but they lied to them, they deceived them, they tempted them, and they tested them with these lascivious doctrines that permit them to live any way they want to live, all the while thinking that they can still go to heaven. When a person is deceived with that, know that they are falling away.

**(2Pe.2:20) For if, after they have escaped the defilements of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ...** Notice that this is the people who have come to the Lord. They escaped the lusts of their flesh in the beginning, but then God brought up things to them in their soul, in their mind, will, and emotions, that they needed to overcome. Of course, they weren’t accounted guilty until God revealed these things, because **(Jas.4:17) To him therefore that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin.** They weren’t guilty until they were tested, tried, and failed. When you don’t have the knowledge of sin, in your igno-

rance, God gives you that dispensation of innocence that Adam and Eve had, but when God shows your sin to you and you deny it because you'd rather stay where you are, then you're going to be judged because you want to live in your sins. You're falling away. **(2Pe.2:20) For if, after they have escaped the defilements of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein and overcome, the last state is become worse with them than the first.** That's because now they know the truth and now they have denied it.

**(2Pe.2:21) For it were better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after knowing it, to turn back from the holy commandment delivered unto them.** Sadly, I know many people like this. They received a lot of truth when they came to our ministry and they were held responsible to what they received. The Bible says, **(Luk.12:48) ... And to whomsoever much is given, of him shall much be required: and to whom they commit much, of him will they ask the more.** In other words, "To whom much is given, much is expected," but these people came to a place where they plateaued and didn't want to go any further. They didn't want to give up the sins they were in and tried to hide them, as they always do, "while they feast with you" (2 Peter 2:13; Jude 1:12). When that happened, they became leaven to the body and the Lord wouldn't permit that, so, like the son of perdition (John 17:12; 2 Thessalonians 2:3), they were revealed as they fell away. Am I saying that everybody is a son of perdition in that manner? No, I'm not. According to Jesus' revelation in the Parable of the Sower, three out of four fall away. I don't believe there are

that many sons of perdition, but they are at least counted among that number.

**(2Pe.2:22) It has happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog turning to his own vomit again, and the sow that had washed to wallowing in the mire.** Isn't it sad to have gone that far only to turn back? **(Heb.6:4) For as touching those who were once enlightened and tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Spirit, (5) and tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the age to come, (6) and [then] fell away, it is impossible to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.** If someone goes that far, if they taste of the "good ... powers of the age to come" and yet they still fall away, it's impossible to move them to repentance. That's not everybody; that's somebody who has gone too far to turn back. Peter says it is worse for you to turn back than if you had never known the Lord, because now you have the knowledge and power to walk with the Lord, but you choose not to. People in the world don't have power to walk with the Lord. Only once you come into the Kingdom because you've escaped the defilements of the world through the knowledge of the Lord, only then do you have power to walk with the Lord. At that point, if you turn back when you've had power to walk with the Lord but you've decided not to, you are held much more responsible. There are people who are just totally in denial. They see themselves as this great "so-and-so." They've been all puffed up by the devil and, truly, they're nobody because they don't have any fruit and they haven't obeyed the Lord.

This is very similar to what it says in Jude. **(Jud.1:1)**

***Jude, a servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James, to them that are called, beloved in God the Father, and kept for Jesus Christ: (2) Mercy unto you and peace and love be multiplied. The reason he addressed them as “called” is because he’s getting ready to warn them that they can fall away. (3) Beloved, while I was giving all diligence to write unto you of our common salvation (They’ve entered into salvation so they have a born-again spirit, but not necessarily a born-again soul, which is your mind, your will, and your emotions.), I was constrained to write unto you exhorting you to contend earnestly for the faith which was once for all delivered unto the saints.***

It is so important that we contend for only what the Bible says. We don’t care what the religions believe. If it’s not helping them, it’s not going to help you. If it’s not bringing them into the Image of Jesus Christ, the Jesus Christ, the One Who walked this earth, the One Who set the captives free, then they’re bearing anti-Christ. If it’s not bringing them into the Image of the One Who believed in healing and deliverance and salvation to the uttermost (Hebrews 7:25), then they’re bearing anti-Christ. If they’re not believing in that Jesus and coming into His Image with His doctrine, then they’re bearing anti-Christ. Remember that “against” means “anti” but it can also mean “in place of.” Jesus warned the Pharisees, ***(Mat.12:30) He that is not with me is against me, and he that gathereth not with me scattereth.***

***(Jud.1:4) For there are certain men crept in privily, [even] they who were of old written of beforehand unto this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness...***

Grace causes you to be an overcomer. Grace is not just so you're forgiven and then you go on to continue in your sins. No. Grace is forgiveness for when you fail. Grace is forgiveness for when you're ignorant. Grace is not for when you're willfully disobedient; you don't get grace there. Remember that Paul rebuked people for turning God's grace into lasciviousness. **(Rom.6:1) What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? (2) God forbid. We who died to sin, how shall we any longer live therein?** They were thinking, "Why don't I continue in sin so that grace may abound?" But lasciviousness is the ultimate end of that doctrine. **(Jud.1:4) For there are certain men crept in privily, [even] they who were of old written of beforehand unto this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness, and denying our only Master and Lord, Jesus Christ.** Yes, not only are they denying the Lord in their own life, they're denying the Lord in other people's lives because of teaching lasciviousness. Make no mistake about it: They are guilty of the blood of the saints. Some people make the Harlot, who is the mother of harlots, this particular religion or that particular religion, but she's the mother that bore them all, that bore all of the dead religions which teach people lasciviousness. It doesn't matter what "church" you're going to, you're a member of the Harlot if you're receiving a seed that's not the Seed of the King.

*The Cost of Not Continuing in Faith*

**(Jud.1:5) Now I desire to put you in remembrance, though ye know all things once for all** (He

really wants them to remember this.), ***that the Lord, having saved a people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed them that believed not.*** He started out by saying they had a common salvation, that they were called of God and were invited to partake of the benefits of the Kingdom, but now he's warning them. He's warning them that even though God saved a people, He later destroyed them because they didn't continue in faith. You know, our faith is supposed to be growing from day-to-day because our knowledge is supposed to be growing. You're supposed to be growing in the faith exponentially as you come to know more and more about God and His promises, because your faith expands to cover these things. Jude said that afterwards, God "destroyed them that believed not" because the Israelites were tested in the wilderness to see if they would believe what God said, yet they moaned and complained and spoke about going back to Egypt (Exodus 14:11-12,29; Numbers 20:4,26:65; etc.) and they did so in their heart, as the Bible shows. And there are many people who have "gone back to Egypt," to serve the "old man" of the land, the "Egyptian." When the Red Sea waters of baptism put to death the "old man," and the "Israelite," who is the spiritual man, came up on the other side, that was the baptism, but they went right back to serving the old man. The Lord commanded them to not ever go back that way, but they did. ***(Deu.17:16) ... Nor cause the people to return to Egypt ... forasmuch as the Lord hath said unto you, Ye shall henceforth return no more that way.***

***(Jud.1:6) And angels that kept not their own principality... (So we have a principality to keep.), but left their proper habitation (Multitudes of people***

have done this and fallen away.), **he hath kept in everlasting bonds under darkness unto the judgment of the great day.** Sadly, some people who are in bondage will never be released from their bondage. (**Mat.13:10**) **And the disciples came, and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables? (11) And he answered and said unto them, Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given.** The disciples wanted Jesus to speak plainly so that the Pharisees could be delivered from bondage, but He said, “to them it is not given,” and they were left in their bondage. (**Jud.1:7**) **Even as Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities about them, having in like manner with these given themselves over to fornication and gone after strange flesh, are set forth as an example, suffering the punishment of eternal fire. (8) Yet in like manner these also in their dreamings defile the flesh, and set at nought dominion** (Notice that all through the Scriptures, these people, the same people we have today, “set at nought dominion” {Genesis 4:8-9,37:20; Exodus 16:2; Jeremiah 37:15-18; Matthew 14:10; etc.}), **and rail at dignities** (That’s the same Greek word *dóksa* again meaning “glories.”). **(9) But Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing judgment, but said, The Lord rebuke thee. (10) But these rail at whatsoever things they know not: and what they understand naturally, like the creatures without reason, in these things are they destroyed.**

### *The Hidden Son of Perdition*

Oh, people can be proud, even arrogant, when they think they know something. They may have received a spirit of religion, because there are many people out there who are under spirits of religion. They even may have an anointing, an anointing from the demon spirit that rules over their religion. Of course, God can give you grace to deliver people from religious spirits, but some are turned over to those spirits because they are in idolatry with a man, or idolatry with religion, or because they like hearing the spirits telling them what they want to hear, and so on. ***(Jud.1:11) Woe unto them! for they went in the way of Cain, and ran riotously in the error of Balaam for hire, and perished in the gainsaying of Korah.*** Korah was one of those rebellions, and when he and his followers rebelled against Moses, they lost (Numbers 16:1-35). They “despised dominion,” they “set at nought dominion.” ***(12) These are they who are hidden rocks in your love-feasts...*** Yes, there are sons of perdition hidden among us, like the son of perdition was hidden among the disciples. They really didn’t know that Judas was hidden among them and what he would end up doing. They didn’t know he would despise dominion until he turned back to the Pharisees and Sadducees and sided with them against Jesus.

***(Jud.1:12) These are they who are hidden rocks in your love-feasts when they feast with you, shepherds*** (There’s no numeric pattern in “shepherds” and the word “shepherds” is not in the original text, although there certainly are shepherds among these people.) ***that without fear feed themselves; clouds without water, carried along by winds; autumn trees without***

**fruit** (With autumn trees, the leaves are dying and they're not taking in the sun anymore, they're not taking in the doctrine of Christ anymore. They're dying in preparation for winter and have no fruit.), **twice dead, plucked up by the roots** (A person can't be twice-dead unless they've been twice-born. This is a falling-away of people who knew the Lord and lost Him.); **(13) wild waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame...** What does the "sea" represent? **(Rev.17:15) And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the harlot sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.** The "sea" is the world, the wicked, the beast. The beasts came out of the sea (Daniel 7:3; Revelation 13:1). They are like those sands on the seashore that are just swept back out to sea when the waves come in. I once saw this vision where the sand was pulled back out to sea, while at the same time, the waves deposited some sand from out of the sea back up onto the seashore. These are people who are coming to God, and the sands that are being dragged back out to the sea are the people who are underneath the dominion of the beast. They are the people who didn't bear fruit.

**(Jud.1:12) These are they who are hidden rocks in your love-feasts when they feast with you, shepherds that without fear feed themselves; clouds without water, carried along by winds; autumn leaves without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots; (13) wild waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame; wandering stars** (In other words, they don't keep their principality. They don't keep their heavenly position.), **for whom the blackness of darkness hath been reserved for ever. (14) And to**

***these also Enoch, the seventh from Adam, prophesied, saying, Behold, the Lord came with ten thousands of his holy ones, (15) to execute judgment upon all, and to convict all the ungodly of all their works of ungodliness which they have ungodly wrought, and of all the hard things which ungodly sinners have spoken against him.*** And they have spoken against His Body, too, but in the Parable of the Sheep and the Goats (Matthew 25-45), Jesus calls them out for it. ***(Mat.25:40) And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it unto one of these my brethren, even these least, ye did it unto me.*** Those who have mistreated God's children, even the least of God's children, are going to answer for what they did. Many people are falling away because they have mistreated God's children and He will not permit them to stay in the body because of it. You see, you only abide in Him by faith through grace.

***(Jud.1:16) These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their lusts (and their mouth speaketh great swelling [words]), showing respect of persons for the sake of advantage. (17) But ye, beloved, remember ye the words which have been spoken before by the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ; (18) that they said to you, In the last time there shall be mockers, walking after their own ungodly lusts. (19) These are they who make separations...*** Yes, they separate people from other people; they separate themselves from the righteous. God makes separations, too. He takes out the "leaven" (Matthew 16:12; 1 Corinthians 5:6-7; Galatians 5:9; etc.) so that His truly righteous saints are not polluted by these people.

***(Jud.1:19) These are they who make separations, sensual, having not the Spirit.*** I've seen so many people who are not filled with the Holy Spirit fall away! They may even have struggled to receive the Holy Spirit, but haven't received it, and therefore don't have the power and discernment which is really needed in the trials of this life. Well, the Bible clearly tells us who can receive ***(Act.5:32) ... the Holy Spirit, whom God hath given to them that obey him.*** So the problem is that many of these people are rebellious and they have not obeyed the Lord.

*Praying in the Spirit Will Build Faith*

***(Jud.1:20) But ye, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Spirit...*** Paul told us, ***(Eph.6:17) And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God: (18) with all prayer and supplication praying at all seasons in the Spirit, and watching thereunto in all perseverance and supplication for all the saints.*** And, ***(1Co.14:6) But now, brethren, if I come unto you speaking with tongues, what shall I profit you, unless I speak to you either by way of revelation, or of knowledge, or of prophesying, or of teaching? ... (13) Wherefore let him that speaketh in a tongue pray that he may interpret. (14) For if I pray in a tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my understanding is unfruitful. (15) What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, and I will pray with the understanding also: I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing with the understanding also. ... (18) I thank God, I speak***

***with tongues more than you all: (19) howbeit in the church I had rather speak five words with my understanding, that I might instruct others also, than ten thousand words in a tongue.*** So you can pray with your understanding, and you can pray with your spirit, also. Paul did both. Of course, we pray in the spirit because we don't know the things that we need to pray for, but the Spirit does, the Spirit Who sees and knows all things, including the future. It's better to depend upon Him and to let Him pray through you according to the Will of God.

***(Jud.1:20) But ye, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Spirit, (21) keep yourselves in the love of God...*** This is good if you don't want to fall away. Praying in the Spirit builds one's faith, and we are "justified" by faith, meaning we are "accounted righteous" by God, who loves and gifts the righteous with His benefits. ***(Jud.1:21) Keep yourselves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life. (22) And on some have mercy, who are in doubt.*** We want to encourage one another to faith because faith is the victory that overcomes the world (1 John 5:4), and without faith, you cannot be well-pleasing unto God (Hebrews 11:6). Many people actually glory in their doubt and in their unbelief. You can tell them what the Word says, you can show them how they can receive this benefit or that benefit, and they don't want to hear it because it makes them responsible to exercise faith in their walk with the Lord. Sadly, of course, there are people you just can't help. As Paul said, "all have not faith." ***(2Th.3:1) Finally, brethren, pray for us, that the word of the Lord may run and be glorified, even as also it is with you; (2) and that***

***we may be delivered from unreasonable and evil men; for all have not faith.***

***(Jud.1:23) And some save, snatching them out of the fire; and on some have mercy with fear; hating even the garment spotted by the flesh.*** There are those “spots” again, but we know what God wants and what He can do. ***(24) Now unto him that is able to guard you from stumbling*** (God can keep you from falling away.), ***and to set you before the presence of his glory without blemish*** (God is a powerful God! Don’t say He can’t do it. You can say that you can’t do it, but you can’t say He can’t do it. That’s why you have to have faith in Him and not yourself.) ***in exceeding joy, (25) to the only God our Saviour, through Jesus Christ our Lord, [be] glory, majesty, dominion and power, before all time, and now, and for evermore. Amen.*** God, we thank You!

***(Rev.2:3) And thou hast patience and didst bear for my name’s sake, and hast not grown weary. (4) But I have [this] against thee, that thou didst leave thy first love.*** How many people have left their “first love”? In many cases, it’s because they were deceived into one of the “harlot’s houses” (Jeremiah 5:7; Proverbs 7:10; Galatians 4:8; etc.) of religion, and they never gained understanding on how to receive power (Acts 1:8), or even that we’re supposed to have power. ***(Joh.20:21) Jesus therefore said to them again, Peace be unto you: as the Father hath sent me, even so send I you.*** They never learned that we already do have power over the principalities and powers and rulers of darkness and over sin. ***(Luk.10:19) Behold, I have given you authority to tread upon serpents and scorpions, and over***

***all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall in any wise hurt you.*** They don't get these understandings, so they have a frustrated life and they see nothing but failure and they fall away. They fall away because they have stumbled into a harlot's house and been lied to, over and over, until they were totally deceived out of what they started with. If a person would just continue to believe in the Lord Jesus as their Savior day-by-day and let Him lead them and not trust in man, if a person would go and seek out what He said and how His precious promises deliver us from lusts and over to the divine nature, they will continue to grow (2 Peter 1:3-4).

### *Your Candlestick Can Be Removed*

I was raised in a religion but it didn't teach the Word of God at all, and I never believed in it much and I never got saved in it. I did everything I could to avoid it because, actually, it was one of the worst ones out there. But then one friend in particular challenged me to read the Bible, so even though I wasn't really interested in serving God, I was very curious and I started reading the Bible. As I did that, as I read the Bible, the supernatural power of that Word got into me and it changed me. I didn't know a preacher and I didn't even know a church, but the Word changed me. I realized, "Wow, this is the truth! I was lied to!" I decided I was going to read the Book and find out what God said, and this is what saved me because by the time I started to visit my brethren out there in the churches, I had some Word in me and I could tell what was right and what was wrong, which was a great help. I suggest to everybody who's stuck in some denomination that doesn't have the

power of God, which are denominations you're commanded to leave (2 Timothy 3:5), to go home and read your Bible because this is where you're going to get the Word of Life. ***(Rev.2:5) Remember therefore whence thou art fallen, and repent and do the first works; or else I come to thee, and will move thy candlestick out of its place, except thou repent.*** So go back to your first love; go back to when you first met Jesus and how you were in love with Him and how you had the joy of the Lord. These things are what the Scriptures will put in you, the divine Nature of God. Don't be trapped by some dead institution. That's how most people get caught and fall away.

*The Falling-Away is Necessary and Must Come First*

Let's look at another place that speaks of the falling-away and the reasons why. ***(2Th.2:1) Now we beseech you, brethren, touching the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and our gathering together unto him; (2) to the end that ye be not quickly shaken from your mind, nor yet be troubled, either by spirit, or by word, or by epistle as from us, as that the day of the Lord is just at hand*** (The "day of the Lord" is both the day that the Lord comes in His first-fruits and the day that the Lord comes to judge the earth.); ***(3) let no man beguile you in any wise: for [it will not be,] except the falling away come first...*** Are we seeing the falling away? Yes, we are. Is the Lord coming? Yes, He is, but not in the way expected by what we loosely call the "church." The first-fruits harvest, of course, is not an expected way of His coming (Exodus 23:19,34:22,26;

Numbers 18:12,28:26; Ezekiel 44:30; Colossians 1:27; etc.) Everybody knows about His other coming, which is at the end of the tribulation period, whether you believe it or not. The coming of the Lord is not going to happen “except the falling-away come first.” This is the way God sanctifies His body, through the falling-away. The falling-away is always those people who live in sin, always, and most often they want to hide it in order to be acceptable to the brethren around them. This is why they are deceivers “hidden in your love feasts” and so on. God has to cull them out and so He uses the falling-away to do this. Of course, people are grieved when they see people falling away, but sometimes they don’t see the greater purpose in this.

***(2Th.2:3) Let no man beguile you in any wise: for [it will not be,] except the falling away come first and the man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition.*** Jesus and His disciples are a type and shadow of the Church, and there was one hidden in their midst, a “son of perdition” named “Judas.” They didn’t know who Judas was; he was hidden and it took the falling-away to reveal him. ***(Joh.13:26) Jesus therefore answereth, He it is, for whom I shall dip the sop, and give it him. So when he had dipped the sop, he taketh and giveth it to Judas, [the son] of Simon Iscariot.*** The disciples had been asking, “Who is he? Is it I, Lord?” (See Matthew 26:17-25; Mark 14:12-21; Luke 22:7-13; John 13:18-30.) I was reading this one day and when I got to the word, “sop,” the Lord said, “SOP, Son of Perdition.” Sure enough, it was Judas. ***(Joh.13:27) And after the sop, then entered Satan into him. Jesus therefore saith unto him, What thou doest, do quickly.*** So a son of perdition is one who is inhabited by Satan. Here Judas Iscariot was

hidden in the midst and up until this time, nobody knew what he was since he was even doing signs and wonders with the rest of them. Only in the falling-away was the son of perdition revealed, and so it is in the larger body today. The same exact thing happens. **(Ecc.1:9) *That which hath been is that which shall be; and that which hath been done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the sun.***

The difference is that the son of perdition today is a much larger corporate body than he was in their day, but then, the body of Christ is also a much larger corporate body. **(Joh.17:12) *While I*** (This is Jesus speaking.) ***was with them, I kept them in thy name which thou hast given me: and I guarded them, and not one of them perished, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled.*** What Scripture needs to be fulfilled? It's the falling-away. **(2Th.2) *To the end that ye be not quickly shaken from your mind, nor yet be troubled, either by spirit, or by word, or by epistle as from us, as that the day of the Lord is just at hand; (3) let no man beguile you in any wise: for [it will not be,] except the falling away come first, and the man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition.*** The coming of the Lord will not happen until the falling-away comes first. Are we seeing it? Of course we are! A tremendous falling-away is happening in these days, as we've never seen before. People are totally turned over to their lusts and totally in rebellion against God. They are deceivers, hiding in the midst until they're caught and revealed by the falling away.

**(2Th.2:4) *He*** (This is the son of perdition.) ***that opposeth and exalteth himself*** (When people are falling

away, they exalt self. It's what they believe is a doctrine, it's what they want to do. If you don't listen to them, if you don't follow them, they'll be mad at you.) ***against all that is called God...*** People say that this is the anti-Christ but you can see now that this is not the anti-Christ. It is an anti-Christ corporate body in the church, and it is falling away from the people of God. ***(1Jn.2:19) They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would have continued with us: but [they went out,] that they might be made manifest that they all are not of us.*** They must come out so that the body "sparkles"; Paul called it "glorious." ***(Eph.5:27) That he might present the church to himself a glorious [church], not having spot or wrinkle or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.*** The corporate body of the Bride is without spot or blemish. How is the body going to come into the Image of Christ if there are spots and blemishes hiding in it? Individually, we have to be delivered of these, and corporately, we need to be delivered of these. When Jesus was explaining the Parable of the Weeds, He said, ***(Mat.13:41) The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that cause stumbling, and them that do iniquity, (42) and shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth.*** And then what happens? ***(43) Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. He that hath ears, let him hear.*** It is a cleansing of the corporate body.

*The Huge Difference Between  
Naos and Hieron Regarding the Temple*

**(2Th.2:4) He that opposeth and exalteth himself against all that is called God or that is worshipped; so that he sitteth in the temple of God...**

I know that many people are waiting for the Jews to rebuild the Temple so that the anti-Christ can show up, but the letter is destroying them (2 Corinthians 3:6). Their teachers, who have received no revelation in the Spirit, who haven't walked with God to find out what God had to say about these things, who have taught that this is some physical temple and an individual, physical anti-Christ, do not know what they're talking about. The Bible only says there are many anti-Christ (1 John 2:18,22,4:3; 2 John 1:7). Yes, this is an anti-Christ; it's an anti-Christ that's coming out of the corporate body of Christ, but it's not the anti-Christ. The word "temple" in this text is the Greek word *naos*, which was used by Paul nine times, but he never used it as the physical temple because *naos* means "that part of the temple where God Himself resides." The physical temple is the Greek word *hieron*, meaning "a temple, either the whole building, or specifically the outer courts, open to worshippers." Here Paul uses *naos* because he's talking about someone being in the body of Christ. They are in the body of Christ, as Jesus said (Matthew 13:20-22,24-30), but He's going to kick them out of His Kingdom (Matthew 13:36-43). He's going to spew them out of His mouth (Revelation 3:16), which means out of His body. I've had people tell me, "Oh, David, they were never saved to begin with." No, they were saved, but they did not endure in faith and bear fruit.

*Who is “He which Restraineth”?*

**(2Th.2:4) He that opposeth and exalteth himself against all that is called God or that is worshipped; so that he sitteth in the temple of God, setting himself forth as God.** (That’s so true! They quite often judge as if they are God, but they’re not. And they quite often rule themselves and are ruled by demon spirits, not by God.)

**(5) Remember ye not, that, when I was yet with you, I told you these things? (6) And now ye know that which restraineth to the end that he may be revealed in his own season.** As we read in verse 3, “except the falling away come first,” can “the man of sin be revealed.” The “falling away” is “that which restraineth.”

Only after someone in the body falls away does the rest of the body realize, “Oh, there he is.” Now some people claim this is speaking of the Holy Spirit. How ridiculous! These are not people who know anything because it tells you right in the text that they’re wrong.

**(2Th.2:6) And now ye know that which restraineth, to the end that he may be revealed in his own season.** The falling-away has to come before “he,” the son of perdition, is revealed or else you won’t know who he is. We just saw that the disciples didn’t know who Judas was until the falling-away. **(7) For the mystery of lawlessness doth already work: only there is one that restraineth now** (Again, the “one that restraineth” is the son of perdition, who is restraining the coming of the Son for His people.), **until he be taken out of the way.**

The numeric pattern says literally, “he comes out of the midst.” He must come “out of the midst” of what? He must come out of the midst of the *naos*, the “temple,” of God’s

people. **(8) *And then shall be revealed the lawless one*** (When Judas came out, he was revealed to be the one whom Jesus spoke about. Until then, the rest weren't sure which one of them it was, and they weren't self-confident, either.), ***whom the Lord Jesus shall slay with the breath of his mouth, and bring to nought by the manifestation of his coming.*** Only now, after the falling-away and the son of perdition has been revealed, does Jesus come.

### *The First-fruits Harvest and the In-gathering Harvest*

Folks, the falling-away is going to happen in two stages, because God has a first-fruits harvest and then He has an in-gathering harvest at the end. The in-gathering harvest will be ongoing throughout the seven years of the Tribulation, but the first-fruits harvest occurs at the beginning of the Tribulation, just as Jesus brought forth a first-fruits harvest at the beginning of His ministry in order to teach and train-up the people during the tribulation that came in His day. So even right now we're seeing a falling-away, and then later, during the Tribulation, we're going to see a falling-away, because the people in the Tribulation will have to go through the things that the first-fruits already have gone through to get them to that point of being sanctified. Falling-away, you see, is a way to sanctify the body, because then those who are sons of perdition are revealed and no longer accepted as members of the body. Usually you can identify them because of their lusts and the things that they hide about themselves. They want to be accepted as right. They don't want to confess their sins or get rid of them, and because they don't confess their sins, they don't get rid of

them; they build-up and build-up until they're taken out.

**(2Th.2:8) And then shall be revealed the lawless one, whom the Lord Jesus shall slay with the breath of his mouth, and bring to nought by the manifestation of his coming; (9) [even he,] whose coming is according to the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, (10) and with all deceit of unrighteousness for them that perish (Why are they able to deceive people who are perishing?); because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. Whom can a deceiver deceive? Only those who don't have the love of the truth, because love of the truth is what would save them. There are purposes for the Judases, the deceivers. They come to cleanse the body. **(2Th.2:11) And for this cause God sendeth them a working of error (And who was the worker of error? In this case, it was the son of perdition.), that they should believe a lie (Because they didn't love the truth, because the truth wasn't important to them, they believed the lie.): **(12) that they all might be judged who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness. (13) But we are bound to give thanks to God always for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, for that God chose you from the beginning unto salvation in sanctification of the Spirit...** Notice, once again, you were chosen to inherit salvation. You have it by faith in the beginning, but as you walk it out, you are receiving it by manifestation. "Salvation" is none other than Jesus Christ; **(Col.1:27) ... Christ in you, the hope of glory.** When you have salvation by faith, your faith is accounted as righteousness (Romans 4:3,5,9,11,24; Galatians 3:6; James 2:23; etc.) If you continue to walk in****

the faith, that salvation which you have in your spirit will continue to be more and more manifested in your soul: in your mind, in your will, in your emotions. It will be manifested. What does salvation look like? It looks like Jesus. **(1Jn.2:6) He that saith he abideth in him ought himself also to walk even as he walked.**

### *The Hope of Our Calling*

**(2Th.2:13) But we are bound to give thanks to God always for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, for that God chose you from the beginning unto salvation in sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth.** David said, **(Psa.119:160) The sum of thy word is truth...** It is true that when you put all the Word about a particular subject together, you have the truth. Pieces of it can lead you astray. Not that the pieces are not the truth, but they are a part of the larger truth. It's like a jigsaw puzzle; each piece is a part. Looking at the one piece, you can't say you have the whole puzzle.

**(2Th.2:14) Whereunto he called you through our gospel...** In other words, you were invited to partake of salvation through sanctification of the spirit in belief of the truth. He invited you to partake of all of this. He's not talking to lost people here. He's talking to what everybody calls "saved" people. They're saved by faith, but they must be continuing on in their faith in order to bear the fruit and manifest their salvation. For instance, if you are believing for a healing, then you take your eyes off the sickness and you get your eyes on the Healer. If, however, you don't endure in your faith until the end, you don't receive the benefit of that healing. You also have to endure in faith in order to

receive the benefit of the healing of your soul. You are to, **(1Ti.6:12) Fight the good fight of the faith, lay hold on the life eternal, whereunto thou wast called, and didst confess the good confession in the sight of many witnesses.** So you claim you're saved, and a lot of people don't understand that they're claiming their salvation by faith before it's manifested. **(Heb.11:1KJV) Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.** You're claiming something by faith before you see it, but when you start in the Kingdom, you're claiming everything by faith, and that faith is accounted as righteousness until you manifest that righteousness. Faith is a means to the end to manifest the righteousness.

**(2Th.2:14) Whereunto he called you** (That's the Greek word *kaleó* and it means "summon, invite.") **through our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.** You see it's not just by faith, but by manifestation. **(15) So then, brethren, stand fast, and hold the traditions which ye were taught, whether by word, or by epistle of ours. (16) Now our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God our Father who loved us and gave us eternal comfort and good hope through grace, (17) comfort your hearts and establish them in every good work and word.** One thing that will keep a person from falling away is to have the hope of His calling, to receive and to understand the hope of His calling, which is **(Col.1:27) ... Christ in you, the hope of glory.** Most people don't have hope of much. They're not taught the great benefits of the Kingdom (Psalm 103:2,116:12). They're not taught that we are called to come into the Image of Jesus Christ and

do His work, His way. They're not taught that that's why we're here. They're not taught that they have the opportunity to bear the fruit of Jesus Christ, 30-, 60-, and 100-fold. The hope of this calling exhorts you to holiness, but they haven't been taught true doctrine. **(1Jn.2:24) As for you, let that abide in you which ye heard from the beginning. If that which ye heard from the beginning abide in you, ye also shall abide in the Son, and in the Father.** The only true doctrine is to hold fast to "that ... which ye heard from the beginning."

**(Eph.1:3) Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly [places] in Christ.** What is a "spiritual blessing"? Well, spiritual blessings can be anything you need to further your walk with the Lord. Many people think spiritual blessings are the fruits of the Spirit. **(Gal.5:22) But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, (23) meekness, self-control; against such there is no law.** Other people say the spiritual blessings are the gifts of the Spirit. **(1Co.12:8) For to one is given through the Spirit the word of wisdom; and to another the word of knowledge, according to the same Spirit: (9) to another faith, in the same Spirit; and to another gifts of healings, in the one Spirit; (10) and to another workings of miracles; and to another prophecy; and to another discernings of spirits; to another [divers] kinds of tongues; and to another the interpretation of tongues.** Both the fruits and the gifts are all spiritual blessings, but so are things you might not think of as being spiritual blessings.

For example, in 1966, Dr. Gary Wood had the experience of being taken by an angel to God's warehouse. The angel showed him unclaimed blessings people had prayed for but did not collect on, including body parts such as legs and arms, and organs such as hearts and eyes. The people didn't collect on them because although they started out in faith, they didn't endure in their faith to receive them. [Editor's Note: This is the famous vision that was given to Dr. Gary Woods when he was killed in a car crash. After 61 minutes, he was miraculously brought back to life and healed by Jesus. His video testimony may be found at: [http://www.divinerevelations.info/garywood/.](http://www.divinerevelations.info/garywood/)] These physical needs are also spiritual blessings, because these are blessings that you need in the Kingdom to promote the Kingdom. You won't be able to promote the Kingdom and share the Gospel if your body doesn't work. And notice all of these He's blessed us with are in spiritual places in Christ. They're in Christ, so where do you go to get them? You have to abide in Him by your faith. Anything you need has been given to you. It's kind of like the parable of Esther; anything she needed was given to her to go from the house of the women to the house of the king (Esther 2:9,15). The Bride is choosing those things that are pleasing unto the King, and that's why She's going to be chosen as the Bride (Galatians 4:26; Hebrews 12:22; Revelation 3:12,21:2,10).

***(Eph.1:4) Even as he chose us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be (We should be something. That's talking about manifestation.) holy and without blemish before him in love: (5) having foreordained us unto adoption as sons.*** That's not children, that's sons. "Son" is past a "child." The Bible says that a "child" is as a "servant." ***(Gal.4:1)***

***But I say that so long as the heir is a child, he differeth nothing from a bondservant though he is lord of all.*** But the word “son” is pointing to the relationship between the son and the Father. ***(Gal.4:7) So that thou art no longer a bondservant, but a son; and if a son, then an heir through God.*** The Greek word for “son” is *huios*, and Strong’s says, “properly, a son (by birth or adoption); (figuratively) anyone sharing the *same nature* as their Father ... emphasizes *likeness of the believer to the heavenly Father*, i.e. *resembling* His character more and more by living *in faith* ... highlights the (legal) right to the *Father’s inheritance*, i.e. as the believer lives in conformity with the Father’s nature (purpose).” A child or servant doesn’t have that relationship. Jesus is a Son of God. He manifests Sonship, and the whole creation is waiting for the manifestation of the sons of God in hopes that the creation itself would be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the liberty and the glory of the children of God (Romans 8:18-19). It’s sonship that we’re looking for. We’re looking to manifest the Son of God.

*How the Promise to Christ Can Become Yours*

***(Eph.1:5) Having foreordained us unto adoption as sons through Jesus Christ unto himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, (6) to the praise of the glory of his grace, which he freely bestowed on us in the Beloved.*** There it is: Sonship is in Christ Jesus. God hasn’t given you a gift outside of Christ so that you can do what you want with it. Some people think, “Well, He’s given us salvation.” No, your salvation is in Christ. Jesus said, ***(Joh.15:6) If a man abide not***

***in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and they gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.*** It's not a gift given to you that He can't take back. It's given to you in Christ. The Law was only a meantime thing. ***(Gal.3:19) What then is the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise hath been made; [and it was] ordained through angels by the hand of a mediator.*** That "seed" was Christ. The promise was made to Christ. How does it become your promise? You abide in Christ. The promise is in the Beloved.

***(Eph.1:7) In whom we have our redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of our trespasses, according to the riches of his grace, (8) which he made to abound toward us in all wisdom and prudence, (9) making known unto us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he purposed in him (10) unto a dispensation of the fulness of the times, to sum up all things in Christ...*** As we've learned, it's not all "things" in Christ, because this is talking about people. It is to "sum up all in Christ"; all of the elect will be summed-up in Christ. You are written-in when you get saved (Luke 10:20; Hebrews 12:23) but He said He would blot your name out of the Book unless you overcame. Who is going to be there at the end? The ones who bear fruit, the spotless and blemishless ones who bear fruit will be there. The "many called" will have fallen away, but the called who are chosen will still be there (Matthew 20:16). They are those whose names will not be blotted out from the Book of Life (Revelation 3:5,21:27).

*Lack of Faith Equals Being Broken Off*

***(Eph.1:10) Unto a dispensation of the fulness of the times, to sum up all things in Christ, the things (Again, these words are not in the original manuscripts; there is no numeric pattern for them. Paul is talking about people.) in the heavens, and the things upon the earth (He is talking about “all in Christ.” Some of us have gone on, some of us are still here, but we all will be summed-up in Christ, in the Body of Christ.); in him, [I say,] (11) in whom also we were made a heritage...* So, if you abide in Him, you bear much fruit (John 15:5). If you don’t abide in Him, you’re broken off as a branch (John 15:6). It’s just like the “olive tree.” ***(Rom.11:19) Thou wilt say then, Branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in. (20) Well; by their unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by thy faith. Be not highminded, but fear: (21) for if God spared not the natural branches, neither will he spare thee.*** You stand by faith, and if you lose faith, you will be broken off.**

*Sealed with the Holy Spirit of Promise*

***(Eph.1:11) In whom also we were made a heritage, having been foreordained according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his will; (12) to the end that we should be unto the praise of his glory, we who had before hoped in Christ: (13) in whom ye also, having heard the word of the truth, the gospel of your salvation,—in whom, having also believed, ye were sealed with the Holy Spirit of promise.*** Notice that

in the book of Acts, there was no argument about whether you should receive the Holy Spirit. The disciples just told people about the Holy Spirit and the people wanted it. You, too, are expected, exactly as they were in the book of Acts, to be saved and to be filled with the Holy Spirit, but there is a destructive, lying, anti-Christ religious spirit out there about not receiving the Holy Spirit and the gifts of the Spirit. The Holy Spirit is power. **(Act.1:8) *But ye shall receive power, when the Holy Spirit is come upon you: and ye shall be my witnesses...*** There are a lot of people who aren't sealed with the Holy Spirit, and they fall away much more often. However, having the Holy Spirit is not what saves you; it's obeying the Holy Spirit that saves you. People who do get filled with the Holy Spirit may still decide to follow the flesh, and then they walk after the flesh. What does the Bible say? **(Rom.8:13) *For if ye live after the flesh, ye must die; but if by the Spirit ye put to death the deeds of the body, ye shall live. (14) For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, these are sons of God.*** There's no way you can manifest sonship without being filled with the Holy Spirit. As we just read, "Ye shall receive power, when the Holy Spirit is come upon you: and ye shall be my witnesses." **(Eph.1:13) *In whom ye also, having heard the word of the truth, the gospel of your salvation,—in whom, having also believed, ye were sealed with the Holy Spirit of promise, (14) which is an earnest of our inheritance*** (An "earnest" is a "down payment." In other words, the Holy Spirit is a "down payment of our inheritance."), ***unto the redemption of [God's] own possession*** (Until He redeems you completely.), ***unto the praise of his glory.***

Now we're getting to the part about the "hope of your calling" (Ephesians 1:4). When you understand what you're called to, and you're constantly cooperating with God along the way by exercising your faith in the promises of God, you're not going to have any problem. But if you think all you have to do is "accept Jesus as your personal Savior" and then go sit down on a pew to wait for the rapture, which is what all the lying teachers say, they say that you've received it all and that's all there is to it, then you're going to fall away.

***(Eph.1:15) For this cause I also, having heard of the faith in the Lord Jesus which is among you, and the love which [ye show] toward all the saints...*** This is one thing that's going to be left. When the "spots" and "blemishes" are gone, there's going to be love among the disciples. We've had a lot of people come to our assembly here and say, "I've never seen love among God's people like we're seeing here." I tell you, He is still working. God is cleansing. God is sanctifying. It's awesome! I've never been among a people that were more loving. You can tell the ones who don't love, and they're always the ones who fall away. You can see them ahead of time. Jesus always saw because He could tell by their fruit.

*The Spirit of Wisdom and Revelation*

***(Eph.1:15) For this cause I also, having heard of the faith in the Lord Jesus which is among you, and the love which [ye show] toward all the saints, (16) cease not to give thanks for you, making mention [of you] in my prayers; (17) that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory,***

**may give unto you a spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him; (18) having the eyes of your heart enlightened...** Since Paul prayed this prayer, it's obviously something that can and does happen, or he wouldn't have prayed the prayer, and God wouldn't have anointed him to pray it. This is a prayer that was answered and could be answered, so this is a real possibility for anybody who walks by faith. If you continue to walk in faith, you will have it. We ask, Lord, that you give us this Spirit of Wisdom and Revelation in the knowledge of You. Yes, Lord, we want our spiritual eyes to be open. We want to understand.

***(Eph.1:18) Having the eyes of your heart enlightened, that ye may know what is the hope of his calling...*** What are you "called" to? What are you "invited" to partake of? It is Christ and all of His glory. He made reconciliation, He made an exchange, He took away your old sinful life and nailed it on that Cross (Romans 4:25,5:10-11; 2 Corinthians 5:18-20; etc.) We were crucified with Christ (Galatians 2:20) and He gave His life for you. This was the exchange, the reconciliation. The "hope of his calling" is the fullness of Christ, just as the Bible says (Colossians 1:27). ***(Eph.1:18) Having the eyes of your heart enlightened, that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints...*** What was your inheritance from your parents? You inherited their nature. You inherited the nature of fallen man through your parents. You inherited blood that had been corrupted, and now you're inheriting Blood that is not corrupted. You're inheriting all that Christ is. Notice it says the "riches of the glory." You see Christ in the mirror by faith

and you grow from glory to glory into that same Image (2 Corinthians 3:18).

*It is Only by His Power*

***(Eph.1:19) And what the exceeding greatness of his power*** (This is the Greek word *dunamis* and it means “miraculous might ... powerful deeds, deeds showing (physical) power, marvelous works.”) ***to us-ward who believe...*** God has power. Many preachers will insist, “You can’t be perfect,” but they’ve never looked up the word “perfect” in the Bible to find out what it says. It’s obvious they’ve never even read the Bible. We know that we can’t do this, but we also know that the exceeding greatness of His power can do this, and it’s to “us-ward” that He gives this great power! ***(Eph.1:19) And what the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to that working of the strength of his might (20) which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead...*** When God raised Christ from the dead, He raised you from the dead. ***(1Co.15:22) For as in Adam all die, so also in Christ shall all be made alive.*** If you abide in Christ, you will come to that resurrection life. You did abide in Adam, and he did die. All the elect shall be made alive, but not necessarily all the called, because some people are invited and they don’t bother to come. Jesus gave the Parable of the Banquet (Matthew 22:1-14; Luke 14:15-24) about those who received an invitation to come to the wedding feast but they all had excuses and they didn’t come. And Jesus also gave an example of a man who did come to the feast but did not have on a wedding garment, and so he was cast forth into out-

er darkness (Matthew 22:11-13). We have to put on Christ. Nobody should even suspect that they'll be in the wedding feast without putting on Christ (Romans 13:14; Galatians 3:27; Ephesians 4:24; etc.) You have to bear fruit.

***(Eph.1:20) Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and made him to sit at his right hand in the heavenly [places,] (21) far above all rule, and authority, and power, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come.*** Notice that when you are in Christ, you also are "far above all rule, and authority, and power, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come." When you abide in Christ, you have His authority. Jesus said, ***(Joh.20:21) ... As the Father hath sent me, even so send I you.*** And ***(Luk.10:19) Behold, I have given you authority ... over all the power of the enemy...*** He is giving that authority to those who abide in Him.

***(Eph.1:22) And he put all things in subjection under his feet...*** Once again, there's no numeric pattern in the word "things," and it shouldn't be in there because this is talking about people. He "put all in subjection," whether it be people, or principalities, or powers, or whatever. This should correctly read: ***(Eph.1:22) And he put all in subjection under his feet, and gave him to be head over all things to the church*** (So He's the Head of the Body, which is the Church, as it goes on to say.), ***(23) which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.*** He's the Head, the Body is the Church, and even under the feet of the Church, everything has been put in subjection. We've been given dominion! Isn't that awe-

some? The hope of our calling is super important because it enables us to continue to walk by faith.

### *The Fullness of Christ in You*

So what is this “hope” of the calling? It is Christ. **(Eph.3:14) For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father** (Now here Paul is praying again, and remember that anything he prays for is something that you can have.), **(15) from whom every family in heaven and on earth is named, (16) that he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory** (God has plenty of glory to give out, and remember that we grow from glory to glory {1 Corinthians 15:40-41; 2 Corinthians 3:18}. That glory, by the way, is an out-shining of the righteousness of God in us.), **that ye may be strengthened with power** (That’s His power, not our power.) **through his Spirit in the inward man** (We’re commanded to be filled with the Spirit of God.); **(17) that Christ may dwell in your hearts through faith...** How does Christ come into your heart? Some people think, “Well, you invite Him into your heart at the very beginning of your walk.” No, Paul is talking here to people who have known God. You exercise faith; Christ comes into your heart as you exercise faith.

How much Christ can you have in your heart? He’s going to tell you. **(Eph.3:17) That Christ may dwell in your hearts through faith; to the end that ye, being rooted and grounded in love** (If you have Christ, you will have love. If a person doesn’t have love, that’s a place that they don’t have Christ.), **(18) may be strong to apprehend...** The *King James Version* says “comprehend,” but that is totally wrong; there’s no numeric pattern

in it whatsoever. The Greek word there is *katalambanó* and it means, “I seize tight hold of, arrest, catch, capture, appropriate.” *Strong’s* says of the two root words: (from 2596 /*katá*, ‘down, according to,’ which intensifies 2983 /*lambánō*, ‘aggressively take’) – properly, take hold of exactly, with decisive initiative (eager self-interest); to grasp something in a forceful (firm) manner; (figuratively) to apprehend ... ‘making it one’s own.’” Paul doesn’t want you to just understand this; he wants you to receive this. ***(Eph.3:18) May be strong to apprehend with all the saints what is the breadth and length and height and depth, (19) and to know the love of Christ*** (You can apprehend all of Christ. If you don’t believe that, read on.) ***which passeth knowledge, that ye may be filled unto all the fulness of God.*** This is the hope of His calling: it’s to “be filled unto all the fulness of God.” Continue on with your faith in the promises, dig into the New Testament, search out these promises (2 Corinthians 1:20; 2 Peter 1:4; etc.), hold them fast (1 Corinthians 15:2; 2 Thessalonians 2:15; etc.), fight the good fight of the faith (1 Timothy 1:18,6:12; etc.), lay hold on life that is eternal (John 17:2; 1 John 2:25; etc.)

In case you didn’t believe him, he’s going to tell you this again in the very next chapter. ***(Eph.4:1): I therefore, the prisoner in the Lord, beseech you to walk worthily of the calling wherewith ye were called.*** Remember that the “hope of his calling” is Christ in you, which is the fullness of God. You will manifest that if you bear fruit, 30-, 60-, and 100-fold. Why doesn’t he go above 100-fold in the Parable of the Sower? It’s because “100-fold” is 100%. ***(Mat.10:24) A disciple is not above his teacher, nor a servant above his lord. (25) It is enough***

**for the disciple that he be as his teacher, and the servant as his lord.** In other words, “every servant shall be as his master.” That’s what Jesus said, and Who is it that does this? It’s Christ in you. It’s still Him, it’s nothing you can claim credit for or brag about (Ephesians 2:8-9). Your faith will bring Christ in you, and He wants you to be worthy of your calling, worthy of accepting the invitation. You value the prize that God is offering and you’re not making excuses like they did in the Parable of the Banquet. “Well, I married a wife so I can’t come” (Luke 14:20) and, “No, I’ve got to go prove a yoke of oxen” (Luke 14:19). These people do not value the prize that God is offering, and it makes Him angry enough to throw them into outer darkness.

***(Eph.4:1): I therefore, the prisoner in the Lord, beseech you to walk worthily of the calling where-with ye were called, (2) with all lowliness and meekness, with longsuffering (That’s because God gives grace to the humble and resists the proud {James 4:6; 1 Peter 5:5}.), forbearing one another in love; (3) giving diligence to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace. (Yes, we must be diligent to do this. There are those who want to divide people after themselves. They make rules about certain things, like baptism or clothing, in order to exclude you unless you become a part of them. These people are deceivers and sons of perdition.) (Eph.4:4) [There is] one body, and one Spirit, even as also ye were called in one hope of your calling; (5) one Lord, one faith, one baptism, (6) one God and Father of all, who is over all, and through all, and in all.*** That’s what God wants to manifest in us, not just by faith, but by manifestation. He wants us to be filled with God, in all, over all. In other words, He’s

ruling over all, and He's working through all, and He's in all. He's in every part of you, and wants you to be filled unto all the fullness of God, as we just read in Ephesians 3:19.

***(Eph.4:7) But unto each one of us was the grace given according to the measure of the gift of Christ.*** In other words, there's one thing that God wants us all to have, and that's His righteousness, His purity, His holiness, but there are also gifts that God wants to minister through us, "according to the measure of the gift of Christ." ***(8) Wherefore he saith, When he ascended on high, he led captivity captive, And gave gifts unto men. (9) (Now this, He ascended, what is it but that he also descended into the lower parts of the earth? (10) He that descended is the same also that ascended far above all the heavens, that he might fill all things.)*** Here again, "things" was not in the original. In fact, some versions have that word italicized, as it should be if it's in there, but it really shouldn't be in there because it's talking about filling all of His people.

### *Perfection Through Christ*

***(Eph.4:11) And he gave some [to be] apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; (12) for the perfecting of the saints...*** It's just astounding how many people don't believe that perfection is possible. They come up with these false doctrines because all they've done is listened to some preacher and never read the Bible for themselves. Perfection is mentioned all the way through Scripture (Genesis 17:1; Song of Solomon 6:13; Matthew 5:48; Colossians 4:12; Philipians 3:15; 1 Peter 5:10; etc.), not as something

that you can't have, but as something that you had better have, because it is possible through Christ to do this. It's not your own ability that does this. We're not saved by works (Romans 4:2), but we're saved for works, the works of God (Ephesians 2:8-9).

***(Eph.4:11) And he gave some [to be] apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; (12) for the perfecting of the saints, unto the work of ministering*** (He's raising-up people into the Image of Christ so that they can do the work of Christ. How can you give something away if you don't have it?), ***unto the building up of the body of Christ...*** Not only are you individually built-up, knowing that Christ wants to be all in your all and that you're to be filled with all the fullness of God, but also the corporate body of Christ has to come in. In order to do that, some people have to be kicked out or else you have spots and blemishes, so there is a falling-away of those who do not bear fruit or who bear bad fruit. ***(Eph.4:12) For the perfecting of the saints, unto the work of ministering, unto the building up of the body of Christ: (13) till we all attain unto the unity of the faith...*** I have seen this. I've seen groups of many varied denominational people coming together in the unity of the faith because they decided that they're just going to believe the Bible. "We're going to believe this. It doesn't matter if our so-called religion doesn't believe this, we're going to believe it." Your faith needs to be unified around one Truth, and that is the Word of God.

***(Eph.4:13) Till we all attain unto the unity of the faith and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a fullgrown man*** (We can mature through the

knowledge of the Son of God, Who was reconciled unto us. We can come into the same Image.), ***unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ*** (In Ephesians 3:19, it was “that ye may be filled unto all the fulness of God,” and now it is “unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ.”): ***(14) that we may be no longer children, tossed to and fro and carried about with every wind of doctrine...*** People are deceived and then led astray by the lure of the flesh. Deceivers all know about the lure of the flesh. They, and the spirits inside of them, lure you by using the lusts of your flesh to give you something that your flesh really wants. Unless you understand the crucified life and how deceptive the flesh is, you can become a victim of these people, you can be “carried about” by all of their “winds of doctrine.” They may even show you some verses that seem to line-up; they just don’t show you all the verses. ***(Eph.4:14) That we may be no longer children, tossed to and fro and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, in craftiness, after the wiles of error; (15) but speaking truth in love, may grow up in all things into him, who is the head, [even] Christ...*** Is Christ the Lord of your life? He said, ***(Luk.6:46) And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?*** What is it to make Jesus your Head? It’s to do what He says. How are you going to find out how to do that? You have to read the Bible. You’re not going to get it from the pulpit. You’re going to have to read the Bible for yourself so that you “may grow up into all things into him, who is the head, [even] Christ.”

***(Eph.4:15) But speaking truth in love, may grow up in all things into him, who is the head,***

***[even] Christ; (16) from whom all the body fitly framed and knit together through that which every joint supplieth, according to the working in [due] measure of each several part, maketh the increase of the body unto the building up of itself in love.*** This is going to be a body of love. They're going to love each other. There will be no deceivers. They will, ultimately, have been purged out of the body. When the Man-child corporate body is raised up, you're going to see that, and you're going to see the Bride corporate body, who recognizes and follows the Man-child, because they, too, have borne fruit. All the rest, the merely religious crowd, won't recognize him, just as even the greatest Pharisees and Sadducees didn't recognize Jesus in His day. The poor, humble people (Matthew 19:13; Mark 10:13; Luke 18:15), (Matthew 20:30) and simple fishermen (Matthew 4:18-22; Mark 1:16-20; Luke 5:1-11) and reviled tax collectors (Matthew 10:3; Luke 19:2), even blind beggars (Matthew 20:30) and pariah lepers (Luke 5:12,17:12-13), they recognized Him, but the "great" men didn't recognize Him. None of the denominations of His day recognized Him, not a one of them.

As John the Baptist said, ***(Joh.3:29) He that hath the bride is the bridegroom...*** Jesus had those followers who understood and followed Him from the very beginning of His ministry and, of course, Judas had to come out of the midst in order for that Body to be sanctified (Matthew 26:25; Luke 22:3; 2 Thessalonians 2:6-8; etc.) Later, of course, a much larger body was raised up by these very same apostles, a much larger body of people who had to go through the same trials and tribulations in order to be purified because there is a first-fruits harvest, and then there is an ingathering harvest (Exodus 23:16).

***(Eph.4:17) This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye no longer walk as the Gentiles also walk, in the vanity of their mind, (18) being darkened in their understanding, alienated from the life of God, because of the ignorance that is in them...*** He's saying to not walk in ignorance, but find out what the Bible says. It can cost you your life to not know what the Bible says because the very words that you read there go into your heart and recreate Christ in you. He is the Word, made flesh (John 1:14). How can you bear fruit, according to the Parable of the Sower, unless the Seed of the Word is sown in your heart? And who is responsible to do that? You are. ***(Php.2:12) So then, my beloved, even as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.***

And now Paul continues his good exhortation to us. ***(Eph.4:18) Being darkened in their understanding, alienated from the life of God, because of the ignorance that is in them, because of the hardening of their heart; (19) who being past feeling gave themselves up to lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness. (20) But ye did not so learn Christ; (21) if so be that ye heard him, and were taught in him, even as truth is in Jesus: (22) that ye put away, as concerning your former manner of life, the old man, that waxeth corrupt after the lusts of deceit; (23) and that ye be renewed in the spirit of your mind, (24) and put on the new man, that after God hath been created in righteousness and holiness of truth.***

***(25) Wherefore, putting away falsehood, speak***

***ye truth each one with his neighbor: for we are members one of another. (26) Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath: (27) neither give place to the devil. (28) Let him that stole steal no more: but rather let him labor, working with his hands the thing that is good, that he may have whereof to give to him that hath need. (29) Let no corrupt speech proceed out of your mouth, but such as is good for edifying as the need may be, that it may give grace to them that hear. (30) And grieve not the Holy Spirit of God, in whom ye were sealed unto the day of redemption. (31) Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamor, and railing, be put away from you, with all malice: (32) and be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving each other, even as God also in Christ forgave you.***

Father, we thank You for this awesome opportunity to be filled with Christ. We thank You that we understand the hope of our calling and it gives us faith to continue on. We thank You that it makes us not to be settled, not to think that we're finished and this is all there is to it and we're just going to sit on a pew and wait for You to come. What silliness is this? It's a war! It's a war to win against the "old man," against the flesh, against the devil, and against the deceivers that are out there. Father, arm us up! Help us to put on our armor and be prepared to win in the Name of Jesus. Amen.

## CHAPTER FIVE

### The Bondage of the Law

#### *The Separation of the Tares from the Wheat*

Father, we thank You so much for anointing us and blessing us to both speak and hear these things. We praise You, Lord! Have mercy upon us, O God, and pour out Your Spirit upon Your people. Lord, we hate to hear about the falling-away, Father, but we know it has to happen. We want as many to avoid it as possible. We ask for Your grace in Jesus' Name, amen.

***(Mat.13:40) As therefore the tares are gathered up and burned with fire; so shall it be in the end of the world.*** Remember that a tare looks very similar to wheat, but it doesn't bear fruit. In other words, this is someone who might have started out with you, but they didn't go on to bear fruit, and that happens a lot. ***(Mat.13:41) The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom*** (Notice this is speaking about people who were in the Kingdom.) ***all things that cause stumbling, and them that do iniquity, (42) and shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth. (43) Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. He that hath ears, let him hear.*** So the wheat and tares are growing together until the "harvest," which is the End-times. Only then would He gather up the tares and remove them, which He is, and has been doing, and those who are left "shall ... shine forth" in the Kingdom of the Father. I

know that's contrary to some people's doctrine, but they just haven't read the Word.

***(Heb.6:4) For as touching those who were once enlightened (These are the people of God, because the rest haven't been enlightened by the Word.) and tasted of the heavenly gift...*** Christ is the "heavenly gift" given to us in exchange for our giving up our old sins and leaving them nailed to that tree. He made "reconciliation" for us, which is an "exchange" (2 Corinthians 5:18; Ephesians 2:16; Colossians 1:22; etc.) He gave us His righteousness, His purity, His holiness, and He took away from us the curse, He took away from us the sin (Romans 8:2; Hebrews 10:10,14; 1 Peter 2:24; etc.)

*The Filling of the Holy Spirit is Essential to Bearing Fruit*

***(Heb.6:4) For as touching those who were once enlightened and tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Spirit...*** This whole text is talking about somebody who has gone too far to turn back. Unless you have been enlightened and tasted of the gift of Christ and received the Holy Spirit, you're very unlikely to bear fruit that looks like Jesus and His ministry. So as the apostle Paul asked the disciples at Ephesus, ***(Act.19:2) ... Did ye receive the Holy Spirit when ye believed? And they [said] unto him, Nay, we did not so much as hear whether the Holy Spirit was [given]. (6) And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the Holy Spirit came on them; and they spake with tongues, and prophesied.*** You see, contrary to popular opinion, after you believe, you should be filled with the Holy Spirit with the same evidence of the gifts that the early dis-

ciples received (1 Corinthians 12:4-11,28-31).

**(Act.2:4) And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance.** “Tongues” is the overwhelmingly common evidence in Acts of being filled with the Spirit. Those who don’t believe the Scriptures in this regard, don’t usually get the other gifts, either (1 Corinthians 12:8-10). Ask God in faith that He fill you with His Holy Spirit and expect the Spirit to speak through you in a language you don’t understand; that’s so you’ll have no knowledge to change what He says. It often helps to find those who have clean lives and are filled with the Spirit themselves, and have them lay hands on you to receive Him. You may initially get only a few words, but say them faithfully and believe for a full language. Then the power of the gifts will come to you. **(Act 1:8) But ye shall receive power, when the Holy Spirit is come upon you: and ye shall be my witnesses both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea and Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.** Why do some people say that you automatically get the Holy Spirit when you’re saved? Isn’t that just a way to keep you from receiving the Holy Spirit the way they received it in the book of Acts? Of course it is, because these are people **(2Ti.3:5) holding a form of godliness, but having denied the power thereof. From these also turn away.** This is a way that they use to separate you from receiving the gift of the Holy Spirit. Jesus promised us, “But ye shall receive power, when the Holy Spirit is come upon you: and ye shall be my witnesses.” Amen!

**(Heb.6:4) For as touching those who were once enlightened and tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Spirit, (5) and**

***tasted the good word of God...*** Many have not done that. They have believed their lying preachers and don't know what the Gospel is all about, since they haven't studied it for themselves. They don't know that God didn't come to just cover-up their sins; He came to save them from the sin nature. The Blood covering is a means to an end, which is a deliverance from the sin. Grace does more than cover sins, and for those who don't go on to receive the manifestation, their "faith" is proven not to be faith.

***(Heb.6:5) And tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the age to come...*** Of course, all of the early Church received the "powers of the age to come," but today, since the lying preachers and false prophets don't have any power, they've made-up the excuse: "Oh, it all passed away with the apostles." Can they prove that from the Bible? No. So who is going to destroy multitudes of people that have initially come to God and received a born-again spirit? It's those same lying preachers and false prophets. ***(Heb.6:5) And tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the age to come, (6) and then fell away*** (They made it to this extent and then fell away.), ***it is impossible to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.*** The Lord doesn't grant everybody repentance. Some people come to the Lord, fall away, and because of ignorance, God permits them to come back. He gives grace for them to come back. Others have received the power to continue walking with the Lord, but they refuse to go on. They choose to follow the devil, the flesh, and the world, and He doesn't always give these people the ability to come back.

How does Christ get in you? Paul spoke about ***(Col.1:27)***

... ***Christ in you, the hope of glory.*** Remember when we studied the Parable of the Sower, we learned that Christ gets in you by His own “seed,” which is the Word of God. There are four places in Matthew 13 (Matthew 13:24,27,37-38) where the word translated “seed” is the Greek *sperma*, because He wanted to identify Who this is that is in you. It is Christ, through His Word. If the Word is manifest in you and bears fruit, praise God! That’s what we’re here for. This is being short-circuited by a lot of people who lust for the world. All they want is for their preachers to “tickle their ears” (2 Timothy 4:3) so that they can feel comfortable when they go back home and continue on in their old, stinking ways. They “crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh.” (**Rom.8:13**) ***For if ye live after the flesh, ye must die; but if by the Spirit ye put to death the deeds of the body, ye shall live.*** They’re putting to death the spiritual man who is being created in the Image of Jesus Christ, and they will be, as Jude called it, (**Jud.1:12**) ... ***twice dead, plucked up by the roots.*** You can’t be twice-dead unless you’re twice-born. Jesus said to His disciples, (**Mat.10:40**) ***He that receiveth you receiveth me, and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.*** He spoke those “words of life” (Proverbs 10:11; John 6:63,68; Acts 7:38) that went into the disciples and recreated in them the Spirit of Jesus Christ. And, as they went on to walk after the Spirit of Jesus Christ, they manifested His Soul: the mind, the will, and the emotions, of Jesus Christ.

### *The Building Stones*

Returning to Hebrews, it says, (**Heb.6:7**) ***For the land which hath drunk the rain*** (The “rain,” in this

case, can represent both the Spirit and the Word.) ***that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them for whose sake it is also tilled, receiveth blessing from God: (8) but if it beareth thorns and thistles, it is rejected and nigh unto a curse; whose end is to be burned.*** Notice this “land” is the people who drank the rain of the Word and received the rain of the Spirit. They are the land. ***(1Co.3:9) For we are God’s fellow-workers: ye are God’s husbandry, God’s building.*** That word translated “husbandry” is the Greek *geórgion* and it means “a tilled field, tilled land,” but we see here that God is also building a “building” (Ephesians 2:21), so these are two parables that represent the same thing. In *The Shepherd*, Hermas was given a wonderful revelation from the Lord of building a building, but some of the stones were cracked, meaning that there was division among them, and some of them were round, which could represent being full of flesh or materialism. On and on, he described the different kinds of rocks and why these people were rejected. They were brought to be used as a part of the building, but were found incapable of being in the building of God. [Editor’s Note: *Hermas* by Graydon F. Snyder, Thomas Nelson & Sons, 1968, or go to <http://www.earlychristianwritings.com/text/shepherd-lightfoot.html> where a PDF may be read at no charge.]

The Bible says we are supposed to ***(Hos.10:12) Sow to yourselves in righteousness, reap according to kindness; break up your fallow ground; for it is time to seek the Lord, till he come and rain righteousness upon you.*** Tilling your “fallow ground” represents repenting so that you can receive the Seed. Many people want to come to Jesus without repenting because their

preachers have made it easy for them: “All you have to do is accept Jesus.” But that’s not what the Bible says. The Bible says to repent and believe (Matthew 21:32; Mark 1:15). The Greek word translated as “repent” is *metanoëó* and it means “I repent, I change my mind, change the inner man, think differently afterwards.” A lot of people don’t want to change their mind and believe what “thus saith the Lord.” They’ve decided to take religion instead, and the Bible says that they will be rejected and cursed (Hebrews 6:8). What can we do? We pray that we shall avoid this terrible mistake.

*There is Only One Doctrine*

***(1Ti.1:1) Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus according to the commandment of God our Saviour, and Christ Jesus our hope; (2) unto Timothy, my true child in faith: Grace, mercy, peace, from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord. (3) As I exhorted thee to tarry at Ephesus, when I was going into Macedonia, that thou mightest charge certain men not to teach a different doctrine...*** There are over 40,000 different denominations today. [Editor’s Note: “The Center for the Study of Global Christianity at Gordon-Conwell Theological Seminary estimated 34,000 denominations in 2000, rising to an estimated 43,000 in 2012. These numbers have exploded from 1,600 in the year 1900.”] They can’t all be right. They can’t be one with each other because they’re factious, and they all want to have their own way and their own doctrines and so on.

***(1Ti.1:3) As I exhorted thee to tarry at Ephesus, when I was going into Macedonia, that thou mightest charge certain men not to teach a differ-***

**ent doctrine, (4) neither to give heed to fables and endless genealogies...** Here's the problem: There is only one doctrine. It's the Scriptures, and all of these 40,000-plus denominations need to go home and read their Bible and humble themselves to everything that's written there, because that is the Seed that brings forth the fruit. Nothing else can bring forth the fruit of Christ. The Sower sowed the Seed, which was the Word, into the hearts, and only one out of four bore the fruit of Jesus Christ. ***(Joh.15:5) I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same beareth much fruit: for apart from me ye can do nothing.*** What is the "fruit" of Jesus Christ? ***(Heb.13:8) Jesus Christ [is] the same yesterday and to-day, [yea] and for ever.*** There is no other Jesus Christ. There is no other fruit. ***(1Jn.2:4) He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him; (5) but whoso keepeth his word, in him verily hath the love of God been perfected. Hereby we know that we are in him: (6) he that saith he abideth in him ought himself also to walk even as he walked.*** He who is a "disciple" is somebody who learns from the Master; he studies the Master in order to learn. *Mathétés* is the Greek word translated "disciple" and it means "a learner and a follower."

***(1Ti.4:1) But the Spirit saith expressly, that in later times*** (That's where we are now.) ***some shall fall away from the faith*** (Here he's going to give us some examples. They aren't the complete list, obviously, but they're the things that Paul wanted to express at that time.), ***giving heed to seducing spirits...*** Spirits like to seduce you away from the truth of the Word of God, because if you

get the Word of God into your heart and you actually obey it, there's nothing they can do with you since Christ in you is much bigger than they are. **(1Jn.4:4) *Ye are of God, [my] little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you than he that is in the world.*** The seducing spirits want to seduce you away from Christ and into the world.

Did you know that there are “religious spirits”? They are the spirits of all the various denominations. Their job is to keep you from coming to Christ, but if they fail in that attempt, then they can sidetrack you and keep you from bearing fruit because the seed that's being sown is not the Seed of Christ. It's just as we read in the Parable of the Weeds (Matthew 13:24-30). **(Mat.13:27) *And the servants of the householder*** (This is the Lord.) ***came and said unto him, Sir, didst thou not sow good seed in thy field? whence then hath it tares? (28) And he said unto them, An enemy hath done this.*** Who is the enemy that sows this seed that is not quite like wheat? The false prophets and their harlot system carry the major blame for this, along with seducing spirits and their doctrines of demons. These are demons that want to lead you astray by tweaking the Word, ever so slightly. That's why at the end of the Book, He pronounces a curse upon those who add to or take away from the Word (Revelation 22:18-19), because if it's a different seed, it's not going to bring forth the fruit of Christ. It will be some other fruit. Remember that “anti-Christ” has two meanings: one is “in the place of” and the other is “against.” Jesus said, **(Mat.12:30) *He that is not with me is against me, and he that gathereth not with me scattereth.*** These doctrines of demons keep people from bearing fruit, and if you don't

bear fruit, you're going to fall away.

So how do these doctrines of demons come? They come **(1Ti.4:2) through the hypocrisy of men that speak lies...** And there are many multitudes of them out there. The only way you'll know they're lying is to know the Word. If you go to some church before you get the Word in your heart, you're probably stuck in one of them. **(1Ti.4:2) Through the hypocrisy of men that speak lies, branded in their own conscience as with a hot iron...** Yes, they don't have a conscience of the Word. The Word of God forms our conscience. Your conscience, generally, just tells you "Do good," and, "Don't do bad," but you have to tell your conscience what is "good" and what is "bad." That's why we study the Scriptures. Our lower, natural, soulish self doesn't know what is "good" and what is "bad." **(1Co.2:14) Now the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him; and he cannot know them, because they are spiritually judged.** You have to humble yourself to the Word. If you humble yourself, God will exalt you. If you exalt yourself, God will humble you (Proverbs 3:34; James 4:6; 1 Peter 5:5; etc.)

**(1Ti.4:1) But the Spirit saith expressly, that in later times some shall fall away from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of demons, (2) through the hypocrisy of men that speak lies, branded in their own conscience as with a hot iron; (3) forbidding to marry...** Of course, this is just another instance Paul is giving us. Churches that forbid to marry are some of the most perverted ones out there, because forbidding to marry is contrary to the nature of man and God doesn't do that. He says that some

people have a gift to do that (Matthew 19:3-12; 1 Corinthians 7:1-7), and it's good if you have a gift to do that, but to have it forced on you by law, that's wrong. That's a doctrine of demons, and that's why there are so many instances of clergy members abusing children or taking advantage of women in their congregations and so forth: their lusts are taking them over.

**(1Ti.4:1) But the Spirit saith expressly, that in later times some shall fall away from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of demons, (2) through the hypocrisy of men that speak lies, branded in their own conscience as with a hot iron; (3) forbidding to marry, [and commanding] to abstain from meats...** That means that they're probably under the Old Testament Law and they don't know what the "meats" represent. Remember that the Law is only **(Heb.10:1) ... a shadow of the good things to come, not the very image of the things...** It's a parable to show us we are not to partake of other, "strange" people's, fleshly ways (Jude 1:7). These animals, which were ritually unclean under the Old Testament Law, are what Peter saw coming down out of heaven. **(Act.10:13) And there came a voice to him, Rise, Peter; kill and eat. (14) But Peter said, Not so, Lord; for I have never eaten anything that is common and unclean. (15) And a voice came unto him again the second time, What God hath cleansed, make not thou common.** Then Peter finally understood the revelation. **(28) ... Ye yourselves know how it is an unlawful thing for a man that is a Jew to join himself or come unto one of another nation; and yet unto me hath God showed that I should not call any man common or**

**unclean.** The animals he saw represented the Gentiles, all the lost kinds of people out there. We don't "partake" of them, or in other words, we don't "fellowship" with these people. It has nothing to do with physical meat. That's the way it's used in Scriptures. We don't partake of their uncleanesses, their flesh. When we share with them, we share with them. That's not fellowship; fellowship is giving and taking. You're not taking anything from them, you're giving them something good so that they can come out of darkness and come into the marvelous light of the Lord (1 Peter 2:9).

***(1Ti.4:3) Forbidding to marry, [and commanding] to abstain from meats, which God created to be received with thanksgiving...*** Now, just look at that. All of you who are going back under the Law, you are, first of all, separating from Christ. ***(Gal.5:4) Ye are severed from Christ, ye who would be justified by the law; ye are fallen away from grace.*** And when you separate from Christ, you separate yourself from grace. You'll find you'll lose grace the more you stay under the Law. You'll lose grace to walk with the Lord. You'll lose grace to overcome sin. You'll lose grace because you're seeking to be justified by your own works, which is what the Law is. You need to understand that the Covenant of the Old Testament and the Covenant of the New Testament are totally different covenants and have two totally different natures.

***(1Ti.4:3) Forbidding to marry, [and commanding] to abstain from meats, which God created to be received with thanksgiving by them that believe and know the truth.*** So if you know the truth, you can eat whatever is put before you. ***(4) For every creature of God is good, and nothing is to be rejected*** (Let's read that again: "nothing is to be rejected."), ***if it be received***

**with thanksgiving** (It's not just on Thanksgiving that we do this; it's every day that we do this. If you don't know you should be doing this every day, here it is.): **(5) for it is sanctified through the word of God and prayer**. These days, the curse has touched everything. Between chemtrails and pesticides, most of the food supply is being poisoned. You need to sanctify your food through prayer and faith.

**(1Ti.4:6) If thou put the brethren in mind of these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Christ Jesus...** That means if somebody doesn't do this, they are not a good minister of Christ Jesus. When a Judaizer puts you under the Law, for instance, or some apostate church puts you under the Law, they're not a good minister of Christ Jesus. Just know that everything else they have for you is garbage, also. **(1Ti.4:6) If thou put the brethren in mind of these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Christ Jesus, nourished in the words of the faith, and of the good doctrine** (So this is good doctrine.) **which thou hast followed [until now:] (7) but refuse profane and old wives' fables...** Anything that anybody adds to the Word of God, such as these rules and regulations that churches like to put on people, could fall under "profane and old wives' fables." God warns us about doing that. **(Rev.22:18) I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, if any man shall add unto them, God shall add unto him the plagues which are written in this book.** Don't make laws that God hasn't made, and don't pervert laws of the Old Covenant by adding them into the New Covenant, because that brings you into bondage.

**(1Ti.4:7) But refuse profane and old wives' fables. And exercise thyself unto godliness** ("Godli-

ness” is, obviously, Christ. You look at Christ and you see godliness. Don’t pervert His sayings, don’t pervert His meanings, don’t add to and don’t take away from them.): **(8) for bodily exercise is profitable for a little; but godliness is profitable for all things, having promise of the life which now is** (That’s because now you can come out from under the curse by godliness. “Godliness,” or “righteousness,” delivers from death {Proverbs 10:2,11:4,6; etc.}), **and of that which is to come.** You want to be delivered from the curse with all the rest of the “saints,” which means “sanctified ones.” **(1Ti.4:9) Faithful is the saying, and worthy of all acceptance. (10) For to this end we labor and strive, because we have our hope set on the living God, who is the Saviour of all men, specially of them that believe.** That’s the Gospel, and the Gospel **(Rom.1:16) ... is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth...** It’s not somebody who believed the Gospel one time and came into the Kingdom, but never grew beyond that to manifest sanctification; it’s somebody who endures to the end, believing the Gospel until they see it manifested. And that manifestation is **(Col.1:27) ... Christ in you, the hope of glory.**

**(1Ti.4:11) These things command and teach. (12) Let no man despise thy youth; but be thou an ensample...** The Greek word there for “ensample” is *tu-pos* and it means “the correct paradigm, based on reliable precedent for others to then follow, (i.e. the right example, a proper pattern).” So even though Timothy, by some people, might be considered too young to be teaching others, in the Kingdom, wisdom is wisdom, and maturity in the Lord is maturity in the Lord. People who look down on someone based on outward appearances are judging after the ways of

the world. **(1Ti.4:12) *Let no man despise thy youth; but be thou an ensample to them that believe, in word, in manner of life, in love, in faith, in purity.***

If a person can't be an example in these ways, they have no business teaching anybody else.

**(1Ti.4:13) *Till I come, give heed to reading, to exhortation, to teaching.*** There's your advice, right there. Until He comes, "give heed." We know that this is Paul talking to Timothy, but Paul was speaking in the Holy Spirit, so we also need to do this until the Lord comes, because He was the One speaking this. **(14) *Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by prophecy, with the laying on of the hands of the presbytery.*** **(15) *Be diligent in these things; give thyself wholly to them*** (In other words, give yourself to good doctrine, godliness, reading, studying, exhortation, and yes, if you're called to it, teaching.); ***that thy progress may be manifest unto all.*** **(16) *Take heed to thyself, and to thy teaching. Continue in these things; for in doing this thou shalt save both thyself and them that hear thee.*** That's right, because first you need to be saved, so that you can give something away. You can't give something away that you don't have. And what "saved" means is the manifestation of the Word in you, first in your spirit, then in your soul, and ultimately in your body. We have to humble ourselves before the Lord and "repent," which means "change your mind," and listen to what He has to say.

### *The Yoke of Bondage*

Let's look at some more principles that can help us escape the falling-away. **(Gal.5:1) *For freedom did Christ set***

***us free: stand fast therefore, and be not entangled again in a yoke of bondage.*** From Galatians chapters 3 and 4, we can see that the “yoke of bondage” is men bringing people under law, and that can be back under the Old Testament Law, or it can be under man’s law in the New Testament. But, for people to be raised-up into the Image of Christ, they have to have faith that He took away their sins (1 John 3:5), that He healed their bodies (1 Peter 2:24), that He delivered them out of the power of darkness (Colossians 1:13), and on and on. They have to have faith in all the wonderful past-tense promises. That’s the Gospel. Anybody who gets you to constantly look at yourself, instead of the Son of God, is going to cast you down because the Law is not of faith (Galatians 3:12). We are not to look at the Son in the legalistic way they do. He took away our sins and delivered us out of the power of darkness and healed our body and provided everything else. Every provision is in Christ. If legalists change Him to “another Jesus,” they’re proving that they don’t know the Gospel and they’re adding-to and taking-away-from the Word, which brings them and their followers under the curse. They’re dangerous! ***(Gal.5:4) Ye are severed from Christ, ye who would be justified by the law; ye are fallen away from grace.*** You don’t want to be entangled in this “yoke of bondage,” because Paul warns you that if you do that, you’re a son of the handmaid and not a son of the free woman (Galatians 4:21-31).

***(Gal.5:2) Behold, I Paul say unto you, that, if ye receive circumcision, Christ will profit you nothing.*** Circumcision is just one particular part of the Law that he’s using here as an example, and so if you seek to be justified by any other part or parts of the Law, “Christ will profit

you nothing.” **(3) Yea, I testify again to every man that receiveth circumcision, that he is a debtor to do the whole law.** You may say, “Well, David, I keep the Sabbath” (Exodus 31:15). Then let me ask, “Do you keep the yearly Sabbath (Hosea 2:11)? Do you keep the seventh year Sabbath (Leviticus 25:2)? Do you keep the Jubilee Sabbath (Leviticus 25:10)? And what about the rest of the 613 commandments of the Old Testament Law?” You are “a debtor to do the whole law,” and since nobody was ever able to do that, you’ve put yourself under a curse. **(Gal.3:10) For as many as are of the works of the law...** In the numeric pattern, the word “the” is not there, because there is the Old Testament Law, but there are also all the laws of man, the rules and regulations of religion. For that reason, he didn’t say “the law” here. This verse should be read, **(Gal.3:10) For as many as are of the works of law are under a curse. For it is written, Cursed is everyone who continueth not in all things that are written in the book of the law to do them.** So if you’re not keeping the whole Law, Paul is saying here that you’re a law breaker and that **(Gal.5:4) Ye are severed from Christ, ye who would be justified by the law; ye are fallen away from grace.** You would have to go back and keep the whole Old Testament Law, and even then you would still be cursed because it passed away in Christ (2 Corinthians 3:14; Galatians 3:19; Colossians 2:14).

**(Gal.4:19) My little children, of whom I am again in travail until Christ be formed in you.** Here the Galatians are “severed from Christ” because they’re seeking to be justified by the Law, and we’ve seen that it doesn’t matter which part of the Law that might be. If you pick out any part or parts of the Law that you want to

be under, you have to keep the whole Law. Don't let these people deceive you. They haven't read the New Testament. You have to keep the whole Law, and even if you could do that, you've still fallen away from grace. Of course, if you're "severed from Christ," you have fallen away from grace and that's a terrible thing. You can't do anything without grace. "Grace" is "God's unmerited favor." If you've noticed, nobody's seeking to actually keep the whole Law. They may be legalists, but they think it's not necessary. They say you just have to do these bits and do those pieces so that you can feel like you're better than somebody else, and be self-justified by your works. Besides, they'll get you to believing that they're the ones who are going to give you the truth, which to them is that you have to go under the Law. They'll make you feel there's nowhere else you can go, but you've fallen away from grace. God says it and He's not going to change His Mind.

### *The Shadow Versus the Real Thing*

And what is the Old Testament Law? (**Heb.10:1**) ***For the law having a shadow of the good [things] to come...*** which is grace, the New Testament and so forth. They had to slaughter all those goats and lambs, and, by the way, they don't do that anymore. So, even according to the Law, the Jews have no sacrifice. Modern Judaism doesn't have any sanctified priests, either, because they don't have the blood of the red heifer to sanctify priests (Numbers 19:1-12). They have nothing. According to their own book, they have no sacrifice. Why would you want to go back and keep a Covenant in which they have no sacrifice? They're two different covenants, very different. So

what is the “shadow”? If the Law is “a shadow of the good things to come,” a “shadow” of the New Testament, are you going to go back and keep the shadow? No. You want to pay attention to what’s standing in the light. That’s what you want to look at. Shadows come from something standing in the light. What is it that’s closer to the sun? It’s something standing in the light. That’s what you want to pay attention to. A shadow is a “hole” in the light. A shadow is darkness. The Law is darkness. It’s a parable, and unless you understand the parable, you have nothing. It’s a parable of the New Testament, and you’re not paying attention to the New Testament if you’re trying to keep the parable instead of fulfilling the parable. The New Testament is the fulfillment of the parable. The Law has only “a shadow of the good things to come.” Why not pay attention to the good things now that they have come? The Law is “not the very image of the things.” You have a hole in the light there. You have darkness there, and if you want to go back and keep that, it’s only so you can claim that your flesh is good for something.

***(Heb.10:1) For the law having a shadow of the good [things] to come, not the very image of the things, can never with the same sacrifices year by year, which they offer continually, make perfect them that draw nigh.*** What did the Jews have to do after they lost their sacrifices and their priests? They had to make a modern religion out of their Judaism. So even though the legalists don’t have the Old Covenant, they still want to bring you under it. Isn’t that crazy? The Old Covenant can never “make perfect them that draw nigh.” God’s argument with the Old Covenant is that it can’t make His people perfect, and by bringing you under the Old Covenant, they’re telling you that you can’t be perfect! Are you going to agree

with them and try to keep the shadow, or are you going to believe the New Covenant and come into the light?

***(Heb.8:6) But now hath he obtained a ministry the more excellent, by so much as he is also the mediator of a better covenant*** (If He's not the mediator of the Old Covenant, then you don't have a mediator if you're in the Old Covenant.), ***which hath been enacted upon better promises***. The Old Covenant wasn't made with you; it was made with the Jews. Who would go back to that, instead of the "better promises" of the "better covenant"? ***(7) For if that first [covenant] had been faultless, then would no place have been sought for a second.*** Why would God get rid of the first Covenant? ***(8) For finding fault with them, he saith, Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, That I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel***. Which He did, and our early forefathers were all Jews. He made a Covenant with them and the rest fell away. The rest were broken-off of the Olive Tree through unbelief (Romans 11:20). You were grafted in by faith, if you endure in the faith. Otherwise you, also, will be broken off (Romans 11:21). That's what Paul said, so why would you go back and follow these people? Why would you follow those who were broken-off from the Olive Tree because they clung to the Old Testament Law, instead of believing what the New Testament says?

***(Heb.8:8) For finding fault with them, he saith, Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, That I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah*** (He did that first with them and then, of course, with the Gentiles.); ***(9) Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers*** (That's the Law.) ***In the day that I took them by the***

**hand to lead them forth out of the land of Egypt; For they continued not in my covenant, And I regarded them not, saith the Lord. (10) For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel After those days, saith the Lord** (In other words, you can go back and keep that Old Covenant if you want, but He has a New Covenant. He has moved on.); **I will put my laws into their mind, And on their heart also will I write them: And I will be to them a God, And they shall be to me a people: (11) And they shall not teach every man his fellow-citizen, And every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: For all shall know me, From the least to the greatest of them. (12) For I will be merciful to their iniquities, And their sins will I remember no more. (13) In that he saith, A new [covenant,] he hath made the first old. But that which is becoming old and waxeth aged is nigh unto vanishing away.** Of course, when He made the New Covenant, it made the Old Covenant old, and it vanished away. You can read on and on, but legalists ignore all of this to bring you under the Law, and to bring themselves under a curse by bringing you under the Law.

Now we can pick up again in Galatians. **(Gal.5:5) For we through the Spirit by faith wait for the hope of righteousness. (6) For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision.** In other words, it doesn't make any difference which part of the Law you're trying to keep because there's nothing in any part of it that will bring you closer to God. Remember we just read, **(Gal.3:10) ... Cursed is everyone who continueth not in all things that are written**

***in the book of the law, to do them.*** If you're going to be closer to God, don't stand in the shadow. Go over there where the One Who stands in the Light is, because then you're closer to God, closer to the sun/Son. ***(Gal.5:6) For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision; but faith working through love.*** This is the thing that's important in the New Covenant: "faith working through love." Notice also that it says "For in Christ Jesus..." What does that mean? That means all the promises are found only in Christ Jesus. For instance, ***(Gal.3:13) Christ redeemed us from the curse of the law, having become a curse for us; for it is written, Cursed is everyone that hangeth on a tree: (14) that upon the Gentiles might come the blessing of Abraham in Christ Jesus*** (You get the blessing of Abraham only if you abide in Christ Jesus.); ***that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.***

***(Gal.3:16) Now to Abraham were the promises spoken, and to his seed. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ.*** So this is the One to Whom the promises were spoken, but if the promises were spoken to just one Person, then how do we get them? The answer is: "And to thy seed..." He said it's not to "seeds, as of many; but as of one." The promises were spoken to Abraham and to his Seed, Christ. ***(Gal.3:17) Now this I say: A covenant confirmed beforehand by God*** (That is Abraham's Covenant.), ***the law, which came four hundred and thirty years after, doth not disannul*** (That means "annul" to us today. The Law did not annul the promises given to Abraham and to his Seed.), ***so as to make the***

***promise of none effect.*** When the Law came, it didn't take away that first Covenant. It's still with us and it's in Christ. That's the only place you can find it. ***(Gal.3:18) For if the inheritance is of the law, it is no more of promise: but God hath granted it to Abraham by promise. (19) What then is the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come*** (Since the "seed" has come, there is no more Old Testament Law.) ***to whom*** (That's Jesus Christ; the promise was made to Him alone.) ***the promise hath been made; [and it was] ordained through angels by the hand of a mediator.*** He's the mediator of the New Covenant, not the mediator of the Old Covenant, because the Old Covenant has passed away. So all the promises of the New Covenant are found in Christ, Who is the mediator of the New Covenant.

### *Abiding in Christ*

***(2Co.3:14) But their minds were hardened*** (This is speaking of the Old Testament Jews.): ***for until this very day at the reading of the old covenant the same veil remaineth, it not being revealed [to them] that it*** (This is speaking of the Old Covenant.) ***is done away in Christ.*** The Old Covenant was done away in Christ. "In Christ" is where you have Abraham's blessing. The Law was a "meantime thing" until Jesus came, as we just read, and all of the blessing of Abraham is in Christ. You must be in Christ to have it. You can't say, "Well, I accepted Jesus as my personal Savior." No, the question is: "Are you in Christ?" It has nothing to do with what you did; it has to do with what you are doing. ***(1Jn.2:24) As for***

**you, let that abide in you which ye heard from the beginning. If that which ye heard from the beginning abide in you, ye also shall abide in the Son, and in the Father. (1Jn.2:6) He that saith he abideth in him ought himself also to walk even as he walked. (1Jn.3:6) Whosoever abideth in him sinneth not: whosoever sinneth hath not seen him, neither knoweth him.** Are you in Christ or are you walking in willful sin? **(Heb.10:26) For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more a sacrifice for sins, (27) but a certain fearful expectation of judgment, and a fierceness of fire which shall devour the adversaries.** Why are you not having the blessings of God? Could it be that you're not abiding in Christ? Jesus said, **(Joh.15:5) I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same beareth much fruit: for apart from me ye can do nothing. (6) If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and they gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.** What's the "fire"? The fire, of course, is the destruction of those who do not bear the fruit of Christ.

You must believe the Word. **(1Jn.5:10) He that believeth on the Son of God hath the witness in him...** What part of the Son of God do you believe in? All of this is the Word, and the Word was made flesh and dwelt among us (John 1:14). This is what you must believe. It doesn't matter what men think; you must believe the Word. Are you going to gamble with your eternal life? Are you going to believe something some man told you, just because you respect him and his religion? Are you really going to gamble

with your eternal life that way? ***(1Jo.5:10) He that believeth on the Son of God hath the witness in him: he that believeth not God hath made him a liar...***

We can see that an awful lot of people who call themselves “Christians” don’t believe on the Son of God. They believe He’s a liar. The Bible says that Jesus, ***(1Pe.2:24) ... his own self bare our sins in his body upon the tree, that we, having died unto sins, might live unto righteousness; by whose stripes ye were healed.*** They don’t believe it. They believe He’s a liar. The Bible says of Jesus, ***(Heb.10:14) For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified.*** They don’t believe that, either. They believe He’s a liar. And you can go on and on, because there are more pages torn out of their Bibles than you can imagine.

***(1Jn.5:10) He that believeth on the Son of God hath the witness in him: he that believeth not God hath made him a liar; because he hath not believed in the witness that God hath borne concerning his Son.*** What does God witness concerning His Son? As we just read, He made complete “reconciliation,” which means a complete “exchange,” He delivered you out from under the curse, He delivered you from sickness, He delivered you out of the power of darkness, and so forth, but if you still think you’re in bondage then you have not believed in the “witness that God hath borne concerning His Son.” The religions out there do not believe in the witness. What religion in Jesus’ day believed on the Son? Not one of them. ***(Ecc.1:9) That which hath been is that which shall be; and that which hath been done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the sun.*** History just keeps on repeating, as God’s Word says.

Those people who followed Jesus had to come out of their religion to follow Him, and it's the same today. You still have to come out of religion if you want to follow Him. The Greek word translated "church" is *ekklésia*, and it is a combination of two words meaning "out from" and "to call," or in other words, the "called out ones." What were they called out of? They were called out of the religions and they were the Church. It's very plain that the Church is not the religions; the Church is those who come out of the religions.

**(1Jn.5:11) And the witness is this, that God gave unto us eternal life, and this life is in his Son.** Religions today act as though God has put eternal life in their hand. Not so! They act as though God has given them unconditional, eternal security as a gift that He cannot take back. Not so! You see, they've left off all the conditions. They've forgotten them all, but one of those conditions is that God did not give unto you eternal life, He gave it to the promised Seed, Christ, "and this life is in his Son." Therefore, you have to abide in Him. It doesn't matter about your religion. Your religion does not abide in Jesus Christ, but you can. You can be the Church. You can be a part of the "called out ones." If you stay there in your religion, you're not going to bear fruit. You'll be like you were, or worse. A lot of people sitting on pews have been like that forty or fifty years, and they haven't grown a bit into the Image of Jesus Christ and they don't yet know the Gospel. They've been deceived. **(1Jn.5:12) He that hath the Son, hath the life** (Where do you have the "life"? Only in His Son, you have eternal life only in Christ.); **he that hath not the Son, hath not the life.** You don't have eternal life following after religion.

You could be dutiful in following everything that religion

teaches, but you still won't bear the fruit of Christ. You'll be a tare because the seed is a little bit different than wheat (Matthew 13:24-30). It doesn't bear the fruit of Christ and it can't bear the fruit of Christ. When you look and see Who Christ was in the Gospels, that's Who you're coming into the Image of. If you're not coming into that Image, you're not bearing fruit. Could that be the reason why three out of every four people who hear the Gospel fall away? I guarantee it. **(2Jn.1:9) Whosoever goeth onward** (In other words, they might have started out with you. They might have received a born-again spirit but they're not obeying that spirit.) **and abideth not in the teaching of Christ, hath not God** (Did they ever have God? Well, certainly, they did, but if they go on and don't abide in Christ, they don't have God.): **he that abideth in the teaching** (That's abiding in the Word, Who is Christ {John1:1}.), **the same hath both the Father and the Son. (10) If any one cometh unto you, and bringeth not this teaching, receive him not into [your] house, and give him no greeting...** You might have thought that was just those religions who like to go door-to-door or witness on street corners, but no. Go back and study it carefully. Many people are deceived and they're not going to heaven because they chose to "goeth onward" away from the teaching of Christ to abide under a man's teaching. **(2Jn.1:11) For he that giveth him greeting partaketh in his evil works.** (Which means these "evil works will come over you.").

### *How to Know if You are in Christ*

**(1Jn.2:4) He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is**

**not in him; (5) but whoso keepeth his word** (The Greek “keepeth” is *téreó* and it is also translated as “watching over, guarding, obeying, keep intact.”), **in him verily hath the love of God been perfected. Hereby we know that we are in him...** And this is how you know that you are in Him: you are studying the Jesus of the Bible to find out what His Word is, and you are *téreó*, “watching over, guarding, obeying” that Word. The modern religions know nothing about Him. They don’t know it’s even a possibility that we should walk in His steps and do things the way He did things and have the power that He had. They don’t think it’s even a possibility and they speak against it every day.

**(1Jn.2:5) ... Hereby we know that we are in him** (That means that we are one of those who has that truly eternal life.): **(6) he that saith he abideth in him ought himself also to walk even as he walked.** What’s “abiding in Him”? It’s *peripateó*, “I conduct my life” by walking as He walked. I’ve had people tell me, “Oh, but David, we can’t do that.” Well, you just have to believe what’s written the Word. You must believe it to receive it. Your carnal mind cannot receive the things of the Spirit of God. **(Rom.8:7) Because the mind of the flesh is enmity against God; for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can it be.** It’s foolishness unto your carnal mind. **(1Co.2:14) Now the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him; and he cannot know them, because they are spiritually judged.** If the man standing in the pulpit doesn’t know and doesn’t agree with the Word, he’s the same thing; he’s carnal. He can’t bring you into the Kingdom because he’s not living there.

***(Gal.5:7): Ye were running well; who hindered you that ye should not obey the truth?*** Apostle Paul is talking here about all those people who went under the Law so they could be justified by their works. Folks, the real Gospel makes you feel justified when you realize that He took away your sins (John 1:29). He delivered you from the power of darkness (Colossians 1:13). He healed your body (1 Peter 2:24). He provided you with everything you're going to need. All of it was in Christ, at the Cross, 2,000 years ago. You can feel very good with the real Gospel. People who go under law, whether it's the Law or any other religious law they may put themselves under, want to do something to make themselves feel justified or acceptable. They think, "Let's do something that makes us different from the rest so that we can believe that we are THE ONES." Why did Paul ask those Galatians, "Who hindered you that ye should not obey the truth?" It was because they started out in the Spirit of God through faith, but they got trapped by their evil theologians into salvation by self-works.

***(Gal.5:8) This persuasion [came] not of him that calleth you.*** What is your "calling," anyway? Your calling is to Christ. You are being called into the Image of Jesus Christ that you can clearly see in the Bible. ***(2Co.3:18) But we all, with unveiled face...*** What did he say about those people under the Law? ***(2Co.3:13) And [are] not as Moses, [who] put a veil upon his face, that the children of Israel should not look stedfastly on the end of that which was passing away: (14) but their minds were hardened: for until this very day at the reading of the old covenant the same veil remaineth, it not being revealed to them that it is done away in Christ.*** He said that they were veiled; we

are not. **(2Co.3:18) But we all, with unveiled face beholding as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, are transformed into the same image from glory to glory, even as from the Lord the Spirit.** We are not veiled, and so we are transformed into that same Image, into the same Image where the blessing of Abraham is, into the same Image where eternal life is! Oh glory, saints! Repent and believe. I'm just showing you what the plain Word of God says.

**(Heb.3:12) Take heed, brethren** ("Brethren" means they're "brothers," and that means they're saved and walking by faith.), **lest haply there shall be in any one of you an evil heart of unbelief, in falling away** (There it is; if you have unbelief, you will fall away.) **from the living God.** Some people insist real brothers can't fall away, but the only people who can fall away are the brethren. The lost, who have never known Christ, can't fall away. He's warning us, "Be careful, because this can happen to you."

### *Let Not Your Heart Be Hardened*

**(Heb.3:13) But exhort one another day by day, so long as it is called To-day...** Yes, we need people around us who recognize things that we don't recognize, even about ourselves, to bring correction to us. If God could use a donkey to correct Baalam (Numbers 22:22-35; 2 Peter 2:15-16), couldn't He use even a child to correct us? Yes. Shouldn't we be humble enough to receive it? Of course. As Paul said to Timothy, **(1Ti.4:12) Let no man despise thy youth; but be thou an ensample to them that believe, in word, in manner of life, in love, in faith, in purity.** Don't look down on anyone God uses to

do this in your life. ***(Heb.3:13) But exhort one another day by day, so long as it is called To-day; lest any one of you be hardened by the deceitfulness of sin.*** It's very true that the further you go into sin, the more your heart is hardened, and the more you don't even know you're falling away. I've seen people fall into faction because the Lord is separating the wheat from the tares. He sees all the time and He sees their sins, even when the tares try to hide them, but God won't permit it. He knows that a little leaven leavens the whole lump (1 Corinthians 5:6; Galatians 5:9), and so He sends faction into them to separate them. You don't have to do a thing. They just become angry with you, make up all kinds of lies, and run off.

***(Heb.3:14) For we are become partakers of Christ, if*** (Notice there is a condition here; it says "if." How can religions preach "unconditional eternal security"?) ***we hold fast the beginning of our confidence firm unto the end.*** It's not that you feel confident because you shook a preacher's hand and you "accepted Jesus as your personal Savior." You can't find that in the Bible any more than you can find "unconditional eternal security." If you have confidence in something that doesn't exist in the Kingdom, what good does that do? That's a deception, a delusion. Jesus said, ***(Mat.10:22) ... he that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved.*** How do you endure to the end? And what are you supposed to be enduring in? You're supposed to be enduring in your faith. He just warned us not to have "an evil heart of unbelief." You must endure.

***(Heb.11:1KJV) Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.*** When you say you're saved, you're not seeing the fullness of that; you're accepting it because God says you're saved.

Those are words of faith on His part, and they should be words of faith on your part. But, if you don't endure to the end, you don't have it by manifestation. You won't receive ***(1Pe.1:9) ... the end of your faith, [even] the salvation of [your] souls.*** The "end of your faith," not the beginning of your faith, is the salvation of your soul. The "end of your faith" is the fourth person that we looked at in the Parable of the Sower (Matthew 13:3-9,18-23; Mark 4:1-9,13-20; Luke 8:4-8,11-15). It's the only one out of the four types of people who bore fruit. What is "fruit"? That's the end of your faith, bearing the fruit. When the plant's still a little seed in the ground, it doesn't have any fruit. But as it takes in the "water" of the Word of God, it grows until it brings forth the "fruit" of the salvation of your soul, which is your mind, your will, and your emotions.

***(Heb.3:15) While it is said, To-day if ye shall hear his voice*** (If you think you're hearing the Voice of the Lord through your preacher, that's not at all certain, but when you do hear His Voice, pay attention to Him.), ***Harden not your hearts, as in the provocation. (16) For who, when they heard, did provoke? nay, did not all they that came out of Egypt by Moses?*** The children of Israel provoked the Lord to anger, and He threatened several times to destroy them all (Numbers 11:1,14:27-29; Deuteronomy 1:34-35; etc.) ***(17) And with whom was he displeased forty years? was it not with them that sinned, whose bodies fell in the wilderness?*** They didn't make it to their Promised Land. ***(18) And to whom sware he that they should not enter into his rest, but to them that were disobedient?*** Grace causes you to obey. ***(Eph.2:8) For by grace have ye been saved through faith; and that not of***

***yourselves, it is the gift of God.*** Since you're saved by grace through your faith, you will be able to obey. That's what real faith does.

***(Heb.3:19) And we see that they were not able to enter in because of unbelief.*** They were not able to enter into that "rest" of their Promised Land, to the "rest" that the Bible says the Promised Land "is a shadow of." The Sabbath is "a shadow of the good things to come" (Hebrews 10:1). It represented the "rest," but it was only one day of rest. How many days do you have to rest from your sin and your own works today? It's every day. God is not going to let you get away with just ceasing from your works one day a week. That was a shadow. Look at the real Sabbath, the Sabbath that's in the Son. In fact, there is no Sabbath given to the people of God but the *sabbatismos*, which is the continual keeping of the Sabbath rest. ***(Heb.4:9) There remaineth therefore a Sabbath rest (That's the Greek word *sabbatismos*.) to the people of God.***

### *The Promise of the New Testament Sabbath*

***(Heb.4:1) Let us fear therefore, lest haply, a promise being left of entering into his rest...*** "A" promise? "A" single promise? Yes, you're supposed to believe all of the promises, every single one. You believe the promise, you exercise your faith in that promise, and then you rest because you know that God has given you this promise. The Bible gives many examples of how faith works. ***(Mat.9:28) And when he was come into the house, the blind men came to him: and Jesus saith unto them, Believe ye that I am able to do this? They say unto him, Yea, Lord. (29) Then touched***

***he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it done unto you.*** That's true for you, also: Be it done unto you according to your faith. ***(Mat.8:13) And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way; as thou hast believed, [so] be it done unto thee. And the servant was healed in that hour.*** Therefore, as you have believed, so shall it be unto you. Now, if you deny the promise, which most people do, then you don't receive it because that's "an evil heart of unbelief."

***(Heb.4:1) Let us fear, lest haply, a promise being left of entering into his rest, any one of you should seem to have come short of it. (2) For indeed we have had good tidings preached unto us, even as also they: but the word of hearing did not profit them, because it was not united by faith with them that heard.*** They didn't exercise faith in the promise, but Joshua and Caleb did. They believed the promise and that one promise made a big difference, because they didn't die in the wilderness. All of the promises in the Word are made to bring you into all of the *sabbatismos* rest, which is ceasing from your works. ***(Heb.4:3) For we who have believed do enter into that rest...*** And when you are exercising faith in those promises, then Who is doing the work? God is. ***(Col.1:27) ... Christ in you, the hope of glory,*** is doing the work. When you believe, for instance, ***(1Pe.2:24) ... by whose stripes ye were healed,*** what do you have to do to get healed? Nothing. No works of yours are accepted there, because you were already healed by His stripes. And if you believe He was the Lamb of God Who took away the sins of the world (John 1:29), what do you have to do to get rid of sin? Nothing. You just rest, because you have faith. You believe

and you rest and God does the rest. Thank You, Father!

Folks, you need to close the door on your church building, go home, and read your Bible. Find all those promises that you haven't believed in the Bible, and decide you're going to believe them. It doesn't matter whether your church believes them or not. You want to be the one out of four who bears fruit by entering the rest. That's why it's the Good News, because it's resting on the promises. It's not by your works. You can't do it. You can't be perfect. You can't overcome sin. You can't overcome sickness. You can't overcome any of the things that God made promises about. You can't do it. If you're doing it, then you're doing it and it's not by the promise and it's not by grace, because grace is unmerited; it's unearned. You pay a doctor, dearly, for what they do, but nobody ever paid Jesus. Nobody ever paid His disciples. And if you come across somebody who is charging a fee to pray for the sick, you're in the wrong place. It doesn't matter if you got healed, because that's not grace; it's works. Grace is unearned.

***(Heb.4:3) For we who have believed do enter into that rest even as he hath said, As I swear in my wrath, They shall not enter into my rest...***

Those children of Israel didn't believe. They weren't mixing faith with all the promises that God had given them, and so He said, "Okay, you're not going into My rest." When we enter the "rest," we cease from our own works, which we've learned means coming out from under both the Old Testament Law and any other religious law that we may have put ourselves under. ***(Heb.4:3) For we who have believed do enter into that rest even as he hath said, As I swear in my wrath, They shall not enter into my rest: although the works were***

*finished from the foundation of the world. (4) For he hath said somewhere of the seventh [day] on this wise, And God rested on the seventh day from all his works; (5) and in this place again, They shall not enter into my rest. (6) Seeing therefore it remaineth that some should enter thereinto, and they to whom the good tidings were before preached failed to enter in because of disobedience, (7) he again defineth a certain day, To-day, saying in David so long a time afterward (even as hath been said before), To-day if ye shall hear his voice (You need to hear His Voice. You need to study the Bible so you can become familiar with His Voice and go on to be a good steward of what's been given to you.), **Harden not your hearts.***

*(Heb.4:8) For if Joshua had given them rest (Well, according to the Law, he did that when he led the people over the Jordan {Joshua 1:10,3:17}.), **he would not have spoken afterward of another day.** (The Israelites entered into only a shadow of the true rest.) **(9) There remaineth therefore a sabbath rest for the people of God.** Again, as we discovered earlier, that word, “sabbath,” there is different from all the rest of the sabbaths in the Bible. The word here is *sabbatismos* and it means a “continual rest.” It’s the only sabbath that remains. All the shadow of that legalistic, Old Testament Sabbath is gone. **(Heb.4:10) For he that is entered into his rest hath himself also rested from his works, as God did from his.** Oh, praise You, Father! Thank You so much! Hang on tight to the Good News, folks!*

### *The Many Anti-Christ*s

Let's look at another example of something that can cause people to fall away. **(Mat.24:4): And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man lead you astray.** "Lead astray" is the Greek word *planaó* and it means "deceive, cause to wander, get off course, roam into error," or in other words, "to deviate from the correct path." Now that's a falling-away, and there are lots of men out there to lead you astray. **(Mat.24:5) For many shall come in my name, saying, I am the Christ...** The actual word for "Christ" here is the Greek word *Xristós* meaning "anointed," and "Christ" is a transliteration of *Xristós*. Many leaders of religion really do think they're anointed. They think they have the truth and that they can give it to you, but Jesus is warning that many are going to come, thinking they're the anointed, and shall lead many astray into a falling-away. There's a multitude of confident people out there. You won't know who's right or wrong, and you won't know what religion is right or wrong, until you read your Bible. Then you'll find out that none of them are right.

**(Mat.24:5) For many shall come in my name, saying, I am the Christ; and shall lead many astray. (6) And ye shall hear of wars and rumors of wars;**(Yes, that's happening.); **see that ye be not troubled: for [these things] must needs come to pass; but the end is not yet. (7) For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom** (We've seen plenty of that.); **and there shall be famines and earthquakes in divers places. (8) But all these things are the beginning of travail.** Yes,

we're waiting for the Woman of Revelation 12 to travail with the Man-child, who is the new leadership for the Church. **(9) Then shall they deliver you up unto tribulation, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all the nations for my name's sake.** You can see that happening now more and more. **(10) And then shall many stumble** (That's like a "falling-away."), **and shall deliver up one another, and shall hate one another.** First of all, if you hate, you have "stumbled." Nobody who hates is going to be in the Kingdom because God is love (1 John 4:7-13). **(11) And many false prophets shall arise, and shall lead many astray.** He's talking again about this false leadership. That was the sheepfold that Jesus went into. He called His own sheep by name and they followed Him out of the sheepfold (John 10:1-6). In His days, the "sheepfold" was those denominations of Judaism. He led His sheep out and He called them the "Church," not the religions, but those who "came out"; they were the *ekkelesia*.

**(Mat.24:12) And because iniquity shall be multiplied, the love of the many shall wax cold.** Some people don't have any love for the true brethren, those people of God who love and study the Word of God. It's possible they will love you because you're part of their religion, but that's not the same thing. Jesus taught in the Parable of the Sheep and the Goats, **(Mat.25:40) ... Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it unto one of these my brethren, [even] these least, ye did it unto me.** If you can't forgive others, you cannot be forgiven, according to Jesus (Matthew 5:9,21-26,38-48, 6:14, 18:21-22; Mark 11:25-26; Luke 11:4; etc.) If you are not forgiven, you are not in Christ, you are not going to heaven, and you shouldn't wonder why the curse is on you after

God pronounced all these blessings upon us. It's because you have not forgiven your brother. It's because you hate those whom you believe have trespassed against you in some way. **(Mat.24:13) But he that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved.** What kind of enduring is he talking about? He's talking about enduring in faith. **(14) And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in the whole world for a testimony unto all the nations; and then shall the end come.**

It takes patience to endure in your faith, but if you're patient in your faith, you will lack nothing. **(Jam.1:4) And let patience have its perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, lacking in nothing.** He goes on, **(Jam.5:7) Be patient therefore, brethren, until the coming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth...** Notice it's not the seed, it's not the plant, it's the fruit. You might have the knowledge of the Seed, but if you aren't putting the Seed to work through faith, you're not going to bear fruit. That's like burying your talent in the "earth," which represents the flesh, because your body came from this earth (Ecclesiastes 3:20,12:7; Job 10:9; etc.) **(Mat.25:24) And he also that had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art a hard man, reaping where thou didst not sow, and gathering where thou didst not scatter; (25) and I was afraid, and went away and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, thou hast thine own. (26) But his lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I did not scatter; (27) thou oughtest therefore to have put my mon-**

***ey to the bankers, and at my coming I should have received back mine own with interest.*** So this servant gave the talent back, but he didn't give it back with fruit.

*We Must Be Patient in Our Faith*

***(Jam.5:7) Be patient therefore, brethren, until the coming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, being patient over it, until it receive the early and latter rain.*** Obviously, to bear fruit, the “seed” needs the “rain,” and notice here that he calls it the “early and the latter rain.” The “early” (or “former”) and the “latter rain” represent the outpourings of the Holy Spirit (Deuteronomy 11:14; Isaiah 32:15; Hosea 6:3; Joel 2:23; Acts 2:38; etc.) What happened under the anointing of the early rain (Matthew 3:11; Mark 1:8; John 1:33; etc.)? The apostles spoke in tongues! They prophesied! They healed the lame! They raised the dead! And on and on (Acts 2:4,3:6,8:23,9:34,40; etc.)! As the Bible promises, ***(Act.1:8) ... ye shall receive power, when the Holy Spirit is come upon you.*** That was the early rain; what we have coming now is the former rain for those who have not yet received it, and then the latter rain, which is going to be beyond anything we can imagine. ***(Hag.2:9) The latter glory of this house shall be greater than the former, saith the Lord of hosts...*** So the seed did bear fruit, but the husbandman had to wait for both the early and the latter rain.

Why are you waiting to be filled with the Holy Spirit? ***(Act.19:2) And he*** (This is Paul addressing the disciples at Ephesus.) ***said unto them, Did ye receive the Holy Spirit when ye believed?*** (Obviously, not every-

one does.) ***And they said unto him, Nay, we did not so much as hear whether the Holy Spirit was given.*** (Many are not told about receiving the Holy Spirit.) ***(3) And he said, Into what then were ye baptized? And they said, Into John's baptism. (4) And Paul said, John baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people that they should believe on him that should come after him, that is, on Jesus. (5) And when they heard this, they were baptized into the name of the Lord Jesus. (6) And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the Holy Spirit came on them; and they spake with tongues, and prophesied.*** It's just foolish to say that we don't need to be filled with the Holy Spirit, when the Holy Spirit is what we need in order to bear fruit.

Do you want to know who the people are that are falling away? They are, by and large, the people who are not filled with ***(Act.5:32) ... the Holy Spirit, whom God hath given to them that obey Him.*** There are a lot of rebels out there, a lot of self-willed, stubborn people. I'm not saying that you have to be perfect to receive the Holy Spirit, because the Holy Spirit is the One Who makes you perfect, but if you're obedient in the Way (Isaiah 30:21,35:8; Acts 9:2; 1 John 2:6), you will submit to Him to receive the Holy Spirit in the way He told you that you would receive the Holy Spirit. If you're not going to be obedient, then you're just setting yourself up to fall away.

***(Jam.5:7) Be patient*** (This is the first of four times that he mentions patience in this passage, so it must be important.) ***therefore, brethren, until the coming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, being patient over***

**it, until it receive the early and latter rain. (8) Be ye also patient** (This is the second mention.); **establish your hearts: for the coming of the Lord is at hand.**

**(9) Murmur not, brethren, one against another...** Grumbling, griping, complaining, criticizing: all of this is murmuring against others. Some people make it their ministry to murmur against others. They don't bother to try to save anybody because, with all their criticism and murmuring, they don't have any forgiveness for others. They have forgotten what happened to those early murmurers. The Lord said, **(Num.14:29) Your dead bodies shall fall in this wilderness; and all that were numbered of you, according to your whole number, from twenty years old and upward, that have murmured against me, (30) surely ye shall not come into the land, concerning which I swear that I would make you dwell therein...** If you're murmuring, you're not being patient, are you?

**(Jam.5:9) Murmur not, brethren, one against another, that ye be not judged: behold, the judge standeth before the doors. (10) Take, brethren, for an example of suffering and of patience** (This is the third mention.), **the prophets who spake in the name of the Lord. (11) Behold, we call them blessed that endured: ye have heard of the patience** (And this is the fourth mention.) **of Job, and have seen the end of the Lord, how that the Lord is full of pity, and merciful.** So what are you supposed to have patience in? As we read earlier, it's patience in your faith, because you won't lack anything when you're patient in your faith (James 1:4). If you have patience in your faith, then you believe the promise and you're going to endure

in that faith until you see the answer. If you don't have patience and you keep giving-up, keep going back to the ways of the world, then you're acting on unbelief and you're not going to receive the promise. How long do you need to be patient in your faith? You need to be patient as long as God says so, because He's the Savior, He's the Deliverer. Your faith has to be tested.

Now let's go back to James 1, where he begins speaking about patience. ***(Jam.1:4) And let patience have its perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, lacking in nothing. (Jam.1:2) Count it all joy, my brethren, when ye fall into manifold temptations...*** Do you feel that way when you're being tested? It's not unusual to not feel that way, but still we are to "Count it all joy." Don't become anxious or worried because this is all part of being patient in our faith. Remember, even Jesus was led by the Spirit of God into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil (Matthew 4:1; Mark 1:12-13; Luke 4:1). Jesus had to be an overcomer before He could receive authority, and He says the same thing to us. ***(Rev.2:26) And he that overcometh, and he that keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give authority over the nations.*** In each of the seven churches, the promises were only to those who were overcomers (Revelation 2:7,11,17,26, 3:5,12,21). If Jesus had to overcome the devil, why would you think that you don't have to overcome the devil? This is what these "manifold temptations" are for: they're to make you an overcomer. What did the devil do with Jesus? The devil tempted Him, and Jesus had to overcome before He could start His ministry. It wasn't enough that He received the Holy Spirit. He had to overcome before He could teach other people.

**(Jam.1:2) Count it all joy, my brethren, when ye fall into manifold temptations; (3) knowing that the proving of your faith worketh patience.** The Greek there for “proving” is *dókimos* and it’s the same word “used for the *dókimos* (testing) of coins, i.e. confirming they were genuine (not counterfeit, corrupted).” So how are you proving your faith is genuine except that you’re holding fast to the promise and not walking by sight? **(Heb.11:1KJV) Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.** “Things not seen” means you’re believing something strictly on the grounds that God said it. You’re believing it even though you don’t see it. You know what the Bible says about your heart, about your life circumstances, about your body, about your children, about your provision, about any need you may have. You know what the Bible says, but are you holding fast to the promise? You’re going to be tested and you have to hold fast to the promise, “knowing that the proving of your faith worketh patience.”

Some people are very impatient. If they don’t get an answer quickly, they’ll use that as an excuse to go back to the way of the world, thinking, talking, and acting the way they did before they were saved. This can’t happen, brethren! God said you must endure the trial of your faith. Maybe you’re complaining or scared or angry with God about your trial. Whatever you may be feeling, the problem is yours. Jesus has already borne fruit. It’s you who has to bear fruit in order to be in that fourth group that Jesus spoke about in the Parable of the Sower. **(Jam.1:4) And let patience have [its] perfect work** (Yes, you’re being tempted, you’re being tested, and in order to see this perfect work manifested, you have to be patient.), **that ye may be**

**perfect** (Wow! So all those preachers who say, “Oh, no, you can’t be perfect,” are lying to you.) ***and entire, lacking in nothing.***

***(Heb.4:1) Let us fear therefore, lest haply, a promise being left of entering into his rest...*** Oh, saints, you don’t want any of these promises to “fall to the earth”! You want to believe every last one of them. It doesn’t matter how many preachers try to talk you out of them, and they do, all the time. They make up their own theology that, of course, they can’t prove from the Bible because it’s not in there. They’re trying to talk you out of the promises, and they don’t know it but they are part of the “manifold temptations.” You want to be “lacking in nothing.” Patience in your faith is powerful to bring you into the Image of Jesus Christ and cause you to abide in Him. And abiding in Him is “lacking in nothing.”

***(Jam.1:5) But if any of you lacketh wisdom*** (In this case, it’s wisdom concerning how to deal with your trials.), ***let him ask of God, who giveth to all liberally and upbraideth not*** (The Greek word there translated “upbraideth” comes from *oneidizó* meaning “mock, create shame, insult, reproach.”); ***and it shall be given him.*** Ask God for everything; He’s not going to chasten you for asking. You have an angel there, just waiting to fulfill the Word of God. ***(Heb.1:14) Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to do service for the sake of them that shall inherit salvation?*** Yes, they are, and they’re just sitting right there, waiting on you, but if you don’t walk by faith and if you don’t speak faith, you have an unemployed angel. They’re powerful and they’re just waiting to hear the Word of God come out of your mouth. ***(Psa.103:20) Bless the Lord, ye his angels, That are mighty in***

***strength, that fulfil his word, Hearkening unto the voice of his word.*** Remember, it took only one angel to kill 185,000 Assyrians who were besieging Jerusalem, and he did it in a single night, too (2 Kings 19:35). The Bible also says only one angel will be needed when it's time to bind the devil and throw him into the abyss for a thousand years (Revelation 20:1-2). Just one! ***(Jam.1:5) But if any of you lacketh wisdom, let him ask of God, who giveth to all liberally and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him.*** So ask, because your angel is waiting on you to speak the Word of God, just waiting on you.

***(Jam.1:6) But let him ask in faith*** (There it is again, you need patience in your faith.), ***nothing doubting...*** What is "doubting"? "Doubting" is not being patient in your faith; you're not enduring in your faith to see the end. What happens when you doubt? You have to go back and start over; start over, believing. So then you go another day and start doubting again, then you've wasted that day, too. How many days are you going to waste, doubting? You still have to endure that trial; you still have to overcome that trial of your faith. How many times are you going to start over while time runs out? Just think of that. ***(Jam.1:6) But let him ask in faith, nothing doubting: for he that doubteth is like the surge of the sea driven by the wind and tossed.***

What did Jesus say about those who heard His Word, but didn't act on it because they didn't believe it? ***(Mat.7:26) And every one that heareth these words of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, who built his house upon the sand: (27) and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and smote upon that house; and it***

***fell: and great was the fall thereof.*** The winds and the waves took that house away. ***(Jam.1:7) For let not that man think that he shall receive anything of the Lord; (8) a doubleminded man, unstable in all his ways.*** That's what the Lord thinks about not being patient in your faith. No, you're not just weak in your faith; you're doubleminded if you have to keep starting over every day to believe for something.

***(Jam.2:17) Even so faith, if it have not works, is dead in itself.*** Faith without works is dead. When you believe something, you're going to act it out. For instance, if you believe you were healed, you're not going to run around everywhere and pay all your money to try to get healing. Here's a good example of someone who acted on their faith. ***(Mat.9:20) And behold, a woman, who had an issue of blood twelve years, came behind him, and touched the border of his garment: (21) for she said within herself, If I do but touch his garment, I shall be made whole. (22) But Jesus turning and seeing her said, Daughter, be of good cheer; thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that hour.*** It's just ridiculous to think that Jesus needs any help from doctors! And, by the way, the medical profession has stolen the sign of the serpent on the pole (Numbers 21:8-9). That's now a symbol of using medicine, but Jesus didn't use medicine and He wasn't a "physician," either, according to our modern definition.

### *Putting Trust in Man is Fruitless*

The word translated as "physician" in the New Testament comes from the Greek *iatros*, meaning "a healer," and

it derives from *iáomai*, meaning “a healing.” *Pharmakeia* is the Greek word translated “sorcery” and it is defined as “the use of medicine, drugs or spells.” *Pharmakeia* is the source of our word “pharmaceuticals.” So Jesus wasn’t a physician and He wasn’t practicing medicine; He was healing. There’s a difference. And He still heals everybody who comes to Him, just as He did then, and just as His apostles did, too, but those healings didn’t come by *pharmakeia* or any other works of man. There were no works of man involved. ***(Jer.17:5) Thus saith the Lord: Cursed is the man that trusteth in man*** (That includes trusting in the methods of man.), ***and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the Lord.*** Of course, lots of people prefer to put their faith in their own works; they want to be in control.

***(Jam.1:12) Blessed is the man that endureth temptation; for when he hath been approved*** (He is “approved” because he held onto his faith, so there’s a condition. It’s “if” you endure.), ***he shall receive the crown of life*** (Approval comes after enduring temptation.), ***which [the Lord] promised to them that love Him.*** If you love the Lord, you’re going to endure temptation. If you love the Lord, you’re going to keep His commandments (John 14:23), but how are you going to keep His commandments unless He does it in you? That’s a good question because I don’t know if it’s even possible, and so He will do it in you. He will cause you to be an overcomer.

Now let’s read this again: ***(Jam.1:4) Let patience have [its] perfect work that ye may be perfect and entire, lacking in nothing.*** Why do people fall away? It’s because they become angry when they don’t receive the answers to their prayers as quickly as they think they

should. They don't let God control the trial, and that's the problem. They're stubborn, they're self-willed, they want to be in control of the trial. I know people who have faithfully endured their trial for years before seeing the answer. They proved that they loved God enough to keep His commandments and not run back to the way of the world. "Cursed is the man that trusteth in man and maketh flesh his arm." "Cursed," the Lord said. If you're trusting in man at the same time that you're asking God to answer your prayer, you'll find out pretty quickly that you're still living under the curse, but the promises are there in order to get you out from under the curse. That's why you should fear leaving out any one of them (Hebrews 4:1).

***(Jam.1:13) Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God; for God cannot be tempted with evil, and he himself tempteth no man: (14) but each man is tempted, when he is drawn away by his own lust, and enticed.*** That word for "lust" is the Greek *epithumia* and it means "inordinate desire... built on strong feelings/urges. These can be positive or negative, depending on whether the desire is inspired by faith, i.e. God's inbirthed persuasion." Are you going to be conquered by your own ungodly desires, or are you going to endure in faith to the end? That's the question. ***(Jam.1:15) Then the lust, when it hath conceived, beareth sin: and the sin, when it is fullgrown, bringeth forth death.*** There's the falling-away right there, because people do not receive the truths of God's Word by faith and hold onto them until they see them in the physical realm. All these promises have already been made, but to bring them into the physical realm, to actually see them manifested in the physical realm, you must endure the trial of

your faith. **(Jam.1:16) Be not deceived, my beloved brethren. (Jam.1:17) Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, coming down from the Father of lights...** How true! We should be praying for “every good and every perfect gift” and enduring in our faith to bring them down into the physical realm. We can be bold to do that because the Bible says, **(1Jn.4:17) ... as he is, even so are we in this world.** Praise You, Father! **(Jam.1:17) Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, coming down from the Father of lights, with whom can be no variation, neither shadow that is cast by turning. (18) Of his own will he brought us forth by the word of truth** (This is how you are begotten unto God in spirit, soul, and, ultimately, body; it’s by the Word of truth.), ***that we should be a kind of first-fruits of his creatures.*** The Word of God is so good!

### *We Must Stay in the Race*

**(1Co.9:24) Know ye not that they that run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize?** Well, that doesn’t leave much room for the rest of us, unless you know that the One Who “receiveth the prize” is Christ and, therefore, if you’re in Christ, you’re going to receive the prize. That means the race is not against your brother, the race is against the time that you have been given to bear fruit. In one way or another, the Lord is coming back for you, whether it’s at death or whatever, and whenever He comes back, your time is up. You could have wasted it all, like in the Parable of the Sower, where three out of the four types of people who heard the Gospel, fell away. You could have

wasted all that time, or you could have been like the people who were invited to the marriage feast, but had all those lame excuses. You don't want to be like them, because that day is certainly coming. **(1Co.9:24) Know ye not that they that run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize? One receiveth the prize. Even so run; that ye may attain.**

**(1Co.9:25) And every man that striveth in the games exerciseth self-control in all things.** Your "self" is your enemy. He's the enemy of the race. Your flesh says, "Go sit down under that shade tree and rest for a while." Mary, my wife, once had a dream just like that. She and another lady were running on a track and the lady wanted to stop running and sit under a tree. But, "No, we have to keep running," is what Mary told this person in her dream. "You have to keep running." It's so true. You can't rest from God. Your rest is from your own works, and your own works are the equivalent of "sitting under the shade tree." Don't let "self" control you at all. **(1Co.9:25) And every man that striveth in the games exerciseth self-control in all things. Now they [do it] to receive a corruptible crown; but we an incorruptible. (26) I therefore so run, as not uncertainly (You want to know that you're going to have the prize, and you know what it takes.); **so fight I, as not beating the air: (27) but I buffet my body** ("Buffet" means "to strike over and over." In other words, you're not going to give your flesh its way. You tell your flesh, "No, you will not rule me! And then, "Pow!" you buffet it.) **and bring it into bondage** (That's right; your body has to obey your spiritual man.): **lest by any means, after that I have preached to others, I myself should be rejected.****

The Greek word for “rejected” is *adokimos*, which means “failing to pass the test, unapproved, counterfeit,” or in other words, “reprobated.” He’s doing all this in order to receive an incorruptible crown. He’s keeping that flesh in bondage; he’s keeping it in obedience to the spiritual man but the opposite is usually what happens. It’s why people die and fall away. They follow the flesh.

***(1Co.10:1) For I would not, brethren, have you ignorant, that our fathers were all under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; (2) and were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea*** (Sure, a lot of people get baptized and some of them even receive the Holy Spirit, but it’s a much smaller group that receives an “incorruptible crown.”); ***(3) and did all eat the same spiritual food; (4) and did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of a spiritual rock that followed them: and the rock was Christ. (5) Howbeit with most of them God was not well pleased: for they were overthrown*** (That’s a “falling-away.”) ***in the wilderness. (6) Now these things were our examples, to the intent we should not lust after evil things, as they also lusted. (7) Neither be ye idolaters, as were some of them*** (People think there aren’t any idolaters in Christianity, but, for goodness sake, what do you think following a religion is? Or following a man? Or trusting them with your salvation?); ***as it is written, The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play. (8) Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in one day three and twenty thousand. (9) Neither let us make trial of the Lord, as some of them made trial, and perished by the serpents.*** How many opportu-

nities have we just seen for people to fall away, in the types and shadows, in the parables? That's why the parables are so useful and so needed; they point out these things to us. ***(10) Neither murmur ye, as some of them murmured, and perished by the destroyer.***

***(1Co.10:11) Now these things happened unto them by way of example...*** The word for "example" there is *tupos* the word for "(a) a figure; a copy, image, (b) a pattern, model, (c) a type, prefiguring something or somebody." In other words, a "parable." Don't go back to try and keep the Old Testament parable when we are supposed to fulfill the parable. That's what the New Testament speaks about. ***(1Co.10:11) Now these things happened unto them by way of example; and they were written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the ages are come.*** That Greek word for "example" is a type for us, a shadow for us, a teaching for us. ***(12) Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall. (13) There hath no temptation taken you but such as man can bear: but God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able*** (In other words, you are able to overcome temptation.); ***but will with the temptation make also the way of escape, that ye may be able to endure it.*** I remember my daddy, who is a good example of this. He smoked for, I think 40 to 45 years and the doctor told him, "Mr. Eells, if you don't stop smoking, you're going to die." They had already cut out part of his lung, and even though he didn't know the Lord, he quit smoking. At that time, he was lost. If a lost person can overcome because of a motivation like this, because of fear, what about us? Do you fear the Lord? He said He wouldn't suffer you to be tempted above what

you are able, and we are able to do all of it only by God's grace. He "will with the temptation make also the way of escape." We can resist the flesh, we can buffet that body, we can say, "No, you will not rule over me." Or, you can continue submitting to the flesh and not go on to bear fruit.

***(Heb.10:32) But call to remembrance the former days, in which, after ye were enlightened*** (You are "enlightened" when you come to know the Lord.), ***ye endured a great conflict of sufferings*** (And, after you come to know the Lord, there's a conflict, because at the same time that you see the promise, you also see that it's not being fulfilled.); ***(33) partly, being made a gazingstock both by reproaches and afflictions; and partly, becoming partakers*** (I've gotten myself into so much trouble defending the saints against other wicked, so-called "Christians"!) ***with them that were so used***. It's a persecution, but you endure this conflict of sufferings, keeping your eye on the promise and claiming the promise as yours. You walk by faith and not by sight (2 Corinthians 5:7). ***(Heb.10:34) For ye both had compassion on them that were in bonds, and took joyfully the spoiling of your possessions*** (You will usually be robbed by those who persecute you.), ***knowing that ye have for yourselves a better possession and an abiding one. (35) Cast not away therefore your boldness, which hath great recompense of reward***. Hold onto your boldness in the Lord. Confess Him before men so that the High Priest of your confession can confess you before God and the angels (Matthew 10:32; Luke 12:8).

***(Heb.10:36) For ye have need of patience, that, having done the will of God, ye may receive the***

**promise.** You have to be patient in your faith to receive the promise. Some people just give up and go back to the world. They have no fruit, and they've lost what fruit they may have had. **(37) For yet a very little while, He that cometh shall come, and shall not tarry.** There's your answer, right there. **(38) But my righteous one shall live by faith: And if he shrink back, my soul hath no pleasure in him.** Why do you listen to the devil when he's trying to talk you out of receiving the promise? Why do you listen to all of his minions, whether human or spirit? They're trying to cause you to give up what you began in your faith. **(Heb.10:39) But we are not of them that shrink back unto perdition** (The Greek word for "perdition" is *apóleia* and it's also translated as "destruction, ruin, loss, perishing; eternal ruin." "Destruction" is what happens when you "shrink back."); **but of them that have faith unto the saving of the soul.** That means exactly what it says: You save your soul when you endure in your faith to receive these promises.

So then, what is "faith"? As we read earlier, **(Heb.11:1) Now faith is assurance of [things] hoped for, a conviction of things not seen.** You're believing you have something strictly on the grounds of the promise. You can't see it yet. Faith is what causes you to do what Jesus said, which is **(Mar.11:24) ... All things whatsoever** (This means "everything." What does "everything" leave out?) **ye pray and ask for, believe that ye received** (This is the Greek *lambanó* and it means to "actively/aggressively lay hold of" something "to take or receive" it.) **them, and ye shall have them.** He said, "Everything you pray for, believe you have received it and you shall have it." Everything. Jesus is saying to walk by faith, and

believing you have received the manifestation before you see it, is what faith is. Once it comes, once you have the manifestation, you don't need faith anymore. **(Rom.8:24) For in hope were we saved: but hope that is seen is not hope: for who hopeth for that which he seeth?** If you can see it, you don't need faith anymore; that's not what the word means.

If you ask, "But, David, what about 'praying through'?" My answer is that "praying through," which is also called the "prayer of importunity," is God being weak to the weak. Jesus described this in the Parable of the Persistent Widow. She wouldn't give up until she received what she was legally entitled to receive. **(Luk.18:1) And he spake a parable unto them to the end that they ought always to pray, and not to faint; (2) saying, There was in a city a judge, who feared not God, and regarded not man: (3) and there was a widow in that city; and she came oft unto him, saying, Avenge (This is the Greek word *ekdikeó* meaning "avenge; vindicate; give legal protection.") me of mine adversary. (4) And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man; (5) yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest she wear me out by her continual coming. (6) And the Lord said, Hear what the unrighteous judge saith. (7) And shall not God avenge his elect, that cry to him day and night, and yet he is longsuffering over them? (8) I say unto you, that he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless, when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth?** Jesus is again saying to walk by faith. Your faith makes you legally entitled to receive the manifested

answer of your prayer, but some people have weaker faith than others, and so they pray and pray until they reach the place where they believe that they've been heard.

***(Heb.11:1) Now faith is assurance of [things] hoped for, a conviction of things not seen. (2) For therein the elders had witness borne to them. (3) By faith we understand that the worlds have been framed by the word of God, so that what is seen hath not been made out of things which appear.*** Then he goes on to talking about how the things that are seen were made out of the faith of those who believed. ***(4) By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, through which he had witness borne to him that he was righteous, God bearing witness in respect of his gifts: and through it he being dead yet speaketh. (5) By faith Enoch was translated that he should not see death; and he was not found, because God translated him: for he hath had witness borne to him that before his translation he had been well-pleasing unto God: (6) And without faith it is impossible to be well-pleasing [unto him]; for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that seek after him. (7) By faith Noah, being warned [of God] concerning things not seen as yet, moved with godly fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house; through which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is according to faith.*** And he continues on with example after example.

In the King James wording it says, ***(Heb.11:1KJV) ... faith is the substance of things hoped for, the ev-***

**idence of things not seen.** What is the “substance” of what you want? It’s faith. You’re giving God the bricks to make the building when you give Him faith. You’re giving Him the substance to make for you the answer, and if you’re wavering back and forth all the time, tossed between faith and doubt and doubt and faith, you’re failing. **(Jam.1:7) For let not that man think that he shall receive anything of the Lord; (8) a doubleminded man, unstable in all his ways. (Heb.3:12) Take heed, brethren, lest haply there shall be in any one of you an evil heart of unbelief, in falling away from the living God. (Heb.3:12) Let us fear therefore, lest haply, a promise being left of entering into his rest, any one of you should seem to have come short of it.** All of that is “falling-away.” When Moses led the people out of Egypt, they didn’t believe the promise, and so they fell away because the promise “was not united by faith with them that heard.” Don’t be a part of the falling-away, saints.

Father, we thank you so much for your mercy towards us. Thank You for drawing us unto Yourself. Thank You for keeping in our heart the wonderful Gospel that You’ve given us, the Good News of what You’ve given us. Give us grace, O God. Grant us repentance, O Lord. Deliver us from the evil heart of unbelief, Father, and cause us to hold fast the confession of our hope that it waver not, because You are faithful that promised. Thank You, Lord, for granting us repentance, drawing us unto Yourself, giving us Your gift of Faith, Father. We ask it in Jesus’ Name. Amen.

## CHAPTER SIX

### The Fruitful or Unfruitful Branch

#### *The Only Seed*

Father, we praise You and thank You for this opportunity for us to come together and study Your Word. Lord, we pray, earnestly, that You will bless everyone who reads this that they may escape the falling-away. Thank You so much, Father. In the Name of Jesus, amen.

We're going to continue our study with a look at Paul's exhortation to the Corinthians. ***(1Co.15:1) Now I make known unto you brethren, the gospel which I preached unto you, which also ye received*** (So he's definitely talking to Christians here.), ***wherein also ye stand, (2) by which also ye are saved*** (The Greek word there is *sózó* and it is grammatically in the active voice; this should correctly read "being saved."), ***if ye hold fast...*** Well, there's that little condition again: "ye are being saved, if." You are being saved if, and only if, you hold fast the Word. That means all those churches out there preaching unconditional eternal security, or ultimate reconciliation, or any other such doctrine, have cut all the "ifs" out of their Bibles. That also means they've been lying to you. ***(1Co.15:1) Now I make known unto you brethren, the gospel which I preached unto you, which also ye received, wherein also ye stand, (2) by which also ye are being saved, if ye hold fast the word which I preached unto you, except ye believed in vain.*** Sadly, there are people who believe, and are Christians, but they don't "hold fast" to the Word and so they

end up believing in vain. It's important what you believe about the Word. It's important that you believe only what "thus saith the Lord," because these are the Words of eternal life (John 6:68), as we have seen. And there's only one "Seed" (Galatians 3:16), which is the Seed of the Scriptures that can recreate in you the living, true Christ, which God considers to be your "fruit."

The Parable of the Sower explains how very important it is that you "hold fast" the original Word which the first disciples preached (1John 2:7,24,3:11; 2 John 1:6), otherwise, you're just wasting your time. Many people have "another Jesus" (2 Corinthians 11:4) because the men that are leading them don't hold fast to the Word. There's only one Word that will bring forth the fruit of Christ, and that is the Seed, which is Jesus Christ, the Sower. That's the Seed which brought forth, in one out of the four types of people, thirty-, sixty-, and a hundred-fold fruit of Jesus Christ. Now if you want to know what the "fruit" looks like, look at Jesus. If you say you abide in Him, you must walk as He walked (1 John 2:6) because He is our demonstration. Don't look to our modern-day preachers; these are all fallen-away from the Truth. So ***(Heb.10:23) let us hold fast the confession of our hope that it waver not; for he is faithful that promised.*** We have to be "he that endureth to the end" to be saved (Matthew 10:22).

Colossians somewhat repeats this. ***(Col.1:21) And you, being in time past alienated and enemies in your mind in your evil works*** (Obviously, again he's speaking to Christians.), ***(22) yet now hath he reconciled in the body of his flesh through death...*** Remember that we discovered "reconciled" is the word *apokatallasso* and it means "to exchange completely." And

who is responsible for making this exchange? You. You are the minister of reconciliation. **(Gal.2:20) ... And it is no longer I that live, but Christ liveth in me...** You cause the reconciliation, the exchange, to come to pass and you do that by your faith and your confession, since **(Jam.2:17) ... faith, if it have not works, is dead in itself.** When you have faith, you walk it and talk it out; in other words, your actions agree with your faith. That's what causes the reconciliation to continue. We understand that the exchange, of course, is the life of Christ for our life, because "fruit" is **(Col.1:27) ... Christ in you, the hope of glory.** Fruit is the 30-, 60-, and 100-fold fruit of the Word sown in the heart, as the Parable of the Sower shows us, and by our faith we consider it done. Jesus said, **(Mar.11:24) ... All things whatsoever ye pray and ask for, believe that ye received them, and ye shall have them.**

When you believe you have received something, you can confess it with confidence, and that agrees with, **(Col.1:22) yet now** (That is the Greek word *nuni* and it means "at this instant; immediately.") ***hath he reconciled in the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and without blemish and unproveable before him: (23) if so be that ye continue in the faith...*** Not just any faith will bring the reconciliation to pass, only faith in the Gospel, faith in the true Word and the true Promises will cause you to bring forth fruit. Religions have fallen far short of this and that's the reason they're not producing people who walk in the steps of Jesus. They only produce people **(2Ti.3:5) holding a form of godliness, but having denied the power thereof. From these also turn away.** The apostle certainly knew what was going to hap-

pen, and so he said to turn away from them. **(Col.1:23) If so be that ye continue in the faith, grounded and stedfast, and not moved away from the hope of the gospel** (“Hope” is the Greek word *elpis* meaning “firm expectation; expectation of what is sure; confidence.”) **which ye heard, which was preached in all creation under heaven; whereof I Paul was made a minister.** Praise God! We are not to be “moved away” from the Good News because the salvation of your soul, the reconciliation, is not the beginning of your faith, it’s the end of your faith (1 Peter 1:9), as we studied in the previous chapter.

**(Gal.3:16) Now** (This word “now” is not in the original text. It was added by the translators.) **to Abraham were the promises spoken, and to his seed. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ.** So the promises were spoken to Abraham and his One Seed. The promises were not spoken to you outside of Christ; they were spoken to you if you abide in Christ. **(17) Now this I say: A covenant confirmed beforehand by God, the law, which came four hundred and thirty years after, doth not disannul** (“Disannul” is how the *King James* translated the Greek word *akuroó* that means “I annul, make of no effect, cancel, invalidate.”), **so as to make the promise of no effect.** The promise to Abraham and to Jesus are still in effect. It’s the Law that’s not still in effect. **(18) For if the inheritance is of the law, it is no more of promise: but God hath granted it to Abraham by promise. (19) What then is the law? It was added because of transgressions** (You see, the main Covenant was the promise to Abraham. Then the Law was added afterward “because of transgressions.”), **till the seed should come to whom the prom-**

***ise hath been made; [and it was] ordained through angels by the hand of a mediator.***

The Old Testament Law is over; it has vanished. It was meant as a temporary measure to help keep people from *parábasis*, from “transgressing, overstepping, deviating” beyond the boundaries set by God. The Law was in effect only until “the seed,” Who is Christ, “should come to whom the promise hath been made.” It’s simply a type and a shadow, as the Bible clearly says, of the greater things which are to come and the greater Covenant, which took its place. (**Heb.8:13**) ***In that he saith, A new covenant he hath made the first old. But that which is becoming old*** (When he said “old” in referring to the first Covenant, he meant something that was “passing away” {2 Corinthians 3:12-14}, and that something new had come to replace it.) ***and waxeth aged is nigh unto vanishing away.*** Well, if the promise was to Abraham and to Christ his Seed, how do we appropriate this blessing? We have to be in Christ. If you’re not in Christ, you don’t have the blessing.

Let’s look some more at what it means to be “in Christ.” (**1Jn.5:10**) ***He that believeth on the Son of God hath the witness in him...*** The word “witness” here is the same word as “testimony” in both the Hebrew and the Greek. In the Greek New Testament, “witness” is from the word *marturia*, meaning “witness, evidence, testimony, reputation.” In the Old Testament, the two tables of “testimony” is the same word as “witness” (Exodus 31:18). Moses the man-child brought the two witnesses to the people of God (Deuteronomy 9:11) and they broke them (Exodus 32:19). Those tables were the written Word of God; His testimony. The Bible says, (**Joh.7:38**) ***He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, from within***

**him shall flow rivers of living water. (39) But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believed on him were to receive: for the Spirit was not yet [given]; because Jesus was not yet glorified.** There's the "witness" or "testimony": It's the Spirit of the Word that all believers receive (Romans 8:9). And, notice we must believe on Him "as the Scripture hath said," not adding to, or taking away, from it.

**(1Jn.5:10) He that believeth on the Son of God hath the witness in him: he that believeth not God hath made him a liar; because he hath not believed in the witness that God hath borne concerning his Son.** Notice that if the preachers are changing any part of the witness, the testimony, concerning the Son, concerning the Word of what He came to do, concerning His sacrifice, concerning the provision that He left us as heirs, if they're changing any of this, then they're making God a liar. And you can tell they're making God a liar because they're not turning-out people that look like Jesus Christ. **(2Co.3:18) But we all, with unveiled face beholding as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, are transformed into the same image from glory to glory, even as from the Lord the Spirit.** And since they're not turning out people that look like Jesus Christ, they're not sowing the right seed. It's their seed, not God's Seed. God's Seed is His Witness, His Testimony that He bore concerning His Son (1 John 5:9).

*The Gift was Given to Christ*

**(1Jn.5:11) And the witness is this, that God gave unto us eternal life** (Yes, He did, but He adds a condition

to that gift.), ***and this life is in his Son***. He didn't put the gift of eternal life in your hand. Eternal life is in Christ; that's where He put the gift. ***(Gal.3:16) ... To Abraham were the promises spoken, and to his seed ... which is Christ***. The promise was made to Christ, not to you. It is only to you if you abide in His Son. The Bible says, ***(1Co.15:22) For as in Adam all die, so also in Christ shall all be made alive***. Life comes from abiding in Jesus Christ. I've had people say to me, "God's given me eternal life, David, and He can't take it back. I have unconditional eternal security." No, people who say that are deceived because God did not do that. He gave eternal life to Christ, so if you don't abide in Christ, you don't have it. That's another reason why people fall away; they think all they need to do is shake a preacher's hand and "accept" Jesus, and they've received something. No, you have to abide in Christ. If you're in Christ, you will be doing what Christ does. We are called the "Body of Christ." Who lives in the Body of Christ? He does. Now, it's a word of faith, I understand, but so many people who call themselves "Christian" don't abide in Christ. They don't abide in His Body, doing His works, thinking His thoughts, doing His deeds, appropriating His blessings, and so on. "God gave unto us eternal life, and this life is in His Son," therefore, we have to abide in His Son to have it. ***(1Jn.5:12) He that hath the Son hath the life; he that hath not the Son of God hath not the life***.

***(2Jn.1:9) Whosoever goeth onward and abideth not*** ("Abide" is the Greek word *menó* and it's also translated "remain, stay, wait, endure, continue, live ... sojourn, tarry.") ***in the teaching of Christ, hath not God...*** You can get saved and you can have a born-again spirit,

but then you can walk on believing some other word than the teaching of Christ or His apostles, and then you don't have God. You've lost Him. Go back, get into the Word of God for yourself, and once again confirm what He says so you know what to believe. There are over 40,000 denominations today and they can't all be right. Only the Word of God is right. **(2Jn.1:9) Whosoever goeth onward and abideth not in the teaching of Christ, hath not God: he that abideth in the teaching** (You abide in the teaching so you can have God.), **the same hath both the Father and the Son. (10) If any one cometh unto you, and bringeth not this teaching, receive him not into [your] house, and give him no greeting: (11) for he that giveth him greeting partaketh in his evil works.** You better pay attention to this if you don't want to put yourself under the same curse that those "evil works" have brought on them. So in Christ is the only place you can claim the gift of eternal life, because your eternal life is Jesus Christ. It's His nature in you: That is eternal life.

**(1Jn.2:4) He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar...** It's true that people make all kinds of excuses for not keeping His commandments, and the doctrine of "unconditional eternal security" is one of the main excuses. It teaches that you can't be lost, even though you don't keep His commandments, but if you were keeping His commandments, you would not be in a dead church that teaches lies in the first place. You wouldn't be in a dead church that doesn't have the power of God and isn't filled with the Holy Spirit. You wouldn't be there. **(1Jn.2:4) He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is**

***not in him; (5) but whoso keepeth his word, in him verily hath the love of God been perfected. Hereby we know that we are in him*** (All of your provision is in Him. You can't claim it any other place than abiding in Him.): ***(6) he that saith he abideth in him ought himself also to walk even as he walked.*** We have to believe exactly what God said, the Witness that God gave, concerning His Son. We don't have to believe anything else. Anybody who teaches anything else, you're not even supposed to have anything to do with them.

Now, didn't Jesus say the exact same thing here? ***(Joh.15:1) I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. (2) Every branch in me that beareth not fruit*** (You can get in Him to begin with, but what He's watching for is to see is whether you're going to bear fruit, because if you're in Him, you should be bearing His fruit.), ***he taketh it away...*** We're watching this happen even now with the faction movement that's going on around the world. He is snatching people out of the body. ***(Mat.13:41) The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that cause stumbling, and them that do iniquity.*** The factious become offended over nothing and then, suddenly, they're gone. They're being gathered "in bundles to burn them," just like He said He'd do with the tares at the end of time (Matthew 13:30), and then ***(Mat.13:43) ... shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father...***

***(Joh.15:2) Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, he taketh it away...*** And if "he taketh it away" is not a "falling-away," I don't know what is! If you were in Him and then you're out of Him, that's a falling-away. The

“fruit” of the branch is the fruit of Christ. Remember, the fruit was the fruit of the Seed that Jesus, the Sower, sowed into hearts. The fruit is not you going out and saving another 30, 60, or 100 souls, as some teach. That’s ridiculous, because all you have to do is just read it and you can see the “fruit” is the fruit of the Seed that Jesus sowed, which is the Word of God. The most important thing you can do is put the Word of God in your heart. If you don’t do that, you’re going to fall away. You have to feed the spiritual man, Who is Jesus Christ in you. You have to feed Him, and He only lives on the Word of God and the breath of the Holy Spirit.

***(Joh.15:2) Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, he taketh it away...*** The Greek word *kathairó* translated there as “taketh it away” means “pruned (purged); eliminating what is fruitless by purifying.” Of course, pruning can be painful, but if you’re sapping the strength that comes from Jesus Christ by getting into too many other things, it’s like burying your talent in the earth (Matthew 25:25), and if you’re doing that, He’s going to cut some things off from you. Some people make idols and those idols are sapping their strength. Notice that all through the Bible, God judged people’s idols (Deuteronomy 31:16-17; Judges 10:6-7; 1 Kings 11:9-11; etc.) Be careful that you don’t make an idol. Don’t make an idol out of your wife, your husband, your mom, your dad, any of your family, or your church, or your preacher, or your job, or even some hobby. Whatever it may be, don’t make an idol.

Anything that you make an idol, He will cut it off because it is sapping your strength that belongs only to the Son. ***(Joh.15:2) Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, he pruneth it*** (Some versions say “taketh it away.”): ***and every branch that beareth fruit, he***

***pruneth*** (This is also translated “cleanseth.”) ***it that it may bear more fruit.*** You don’t want to lose a husband or wife because you’ve made a god out of them and they’re ruling your life and your time. Of course, we have rules in the Scriptures. The head of the woman is the man and the head of the man is Christ (1 Corinthians 11:2-16). That’s obeying Christ. That’s abiding in Christ. But you don’t want to make a god out of your spouse to the point where everything revolves around them.

You have a relationship with the Lord, and the most important thing for you to do is to obey His Word or else you don’t abide in Him, just as we saw. And you can obey His Word when you walk by faith and you have the good confession, the reconciliation. We are ministers of this reconciliation. ***(2Co.5:17) Wherefore if any man is in Christ, [he is] a new creature: the old things are passed away; behold, they are become new. (18) But all things are of God, who reconciled us to himself through Christ, and gave unto us the ministry of reconciliation; (19) to wit, that God was in Christ reconciling the world unto himself, not reckoning unto them their trespasses, and having committed unto us the word of reconciliation. (20) We are ambassadors therefore on behalf of Christ, as though God were entreating by us: we beseech [you] on behalf of Christ, be ye reconciled to God.*** We make this exchange happen in ourselves. First comes the Spirit of Jesus Christ and then, as you obey that Spirit, the Soul of Jesus Christ, and if you’ve obeyed in the soul, you will have a new body. And when we preach the Gospel to other people, we make this exchange happen in them. They repent of the old man and the new man be-

gins to come in. So He prunes His people to help them bear more fruit. If you waste your time by not bearing fruit, you are thrown out, “spewed” out, of the body of Christ (Revelation 3:16). You’re rejected. You have fallen away.

***(Joh.15:3) Already ye are clean because of the word which I have spoken unto you.*** The Word cleans you up. The Word transforms you by the “renewing of your mind.” ***(Rom.12:2) And be not fashioned according to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, and ye may prove what is the good and acceptable and perfect will of God.*** What are you transformed into? Christ. The Word creates ***(Col.1:27) ... Christ in you, the hope of glory.*** You’re coming into His Image. He’s recreating the body of Christ in the earth, and the true body of Christ does not look like modern Christians today. That’s not the body of Christ. ***(2Co.6:17) Wherefore Come ye out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, And touch no unclean thing; And I will receive you.*** You need to come out from among them and be separate.

***(Joh.15:4) Abide in me*** (If you don’t abide in Christ, you’re cast forth as a branch.), ***and I in you...*** How do you put Jesus in you? You put Jesus in you through the Word because He is the Word made flesh (John 1:14). He is the manna that came down out of heaven that gives life to the world (John 6:51). This Word is the Manna. Eat the Word. If you want to bear fruit quickly, eat more of the Word and repent of your old life. There has to be a reconciliation, an exchange. You have to give up something to get something. You have to lose your life to gain your life, Jesus said (Matthew 16:25). That’s a condition, but people ignore that condition. If you want more of Jesus’ life, then

there has to be less of your life because they occupy the same territory. **(2Co.4:16) *Wherefore we faint not; but though our outward man is decaying, yet our inward man is renewed day by day.***

**(Joh.15:4) *Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself..*** That just makes good sense. If it's not connected to the trunk or the vine, a branch is not going to bear fruit; it's going to die. If you don't stay connected to the Lord because you're refusing to bear the fruit and act on the Word, well, you're broken off. You might be sitting on a pew, but it won't make any difference; you're still broken off. **(Joh.15:4) *Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; so neither can ye, except ye abide in me. (5) I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same beareth much fruit: for apart from me ye can do nothing.*** Do you want to bear even more fruit? Then put the Word of God in your heart and abide in Him by keeping His commandments. You can keep His commandments because God will give you grace for faith. Do you believe the reconciliation? It happened at the Cross. He gave all of His Son for all of our old life. **(Rom.6:11) *Even so reckon ye also yourselves to be dead unto sin, but alive unto God in Christ Jesus. (12) Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey the lusts thereof.*** If you believe it's done, God will empower you to bear fruit, "for apart from me ye can do nothing." Absolutely. If we don't abide in Him, we can do nothing.

**(Joh.15:6) *If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch...*** This whole passage is talking about

abiding in Him and so, even though he was there to begin with, here he's cast forth as a branch. Some people say that if a person falls away, then he never was saved in the first place. False. We're seeing that's not true because this whole text is saying that's a lie. **(Joh.15:6) *If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and they gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned. (7) If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you*** (There it is two more times again.), ***ask whatsoever ye will, and it shall be done unto you.*** Do you know a lot of people who don't get any of their prayers answered? What's the problem? He said, "If you abide in Me, and My Words abide in you, ask whatsoever you will." In other words, if this happens, your will is changed. Your will is in agreement with God; it's in agreement with His Word. **(Amo.3:3) *Shall two walk together, except they have agreed?*** We read the Scriptures in order to come into agreement with Him, so that everything we ask is according to His Will and, therefore, we receive it. He wants us to bear fruit like this. "Ask whatsoever ye will, and it shall be done unto you." People who come into agreement with God are people with power! These are people whose prayer has power to deliver, to save, to provide.

If you don't have enough power, maybe you should spend more time putting His Word in you, because faith comes through hearing and hearing by the Word (Rom.10:17). Spend more time putting the Word in you. There's an uncertainty when you don't know God's Will. It's hard to have faith if you don't know something is God's Will, but you'll become convinced what God's Will is by watching Jesus, by watching His disciples, by reading about them. You'll

see it's obvious that God's Will is to save, to heal, to deliver His people. You become convinced of that when you put the Word in you. When you put the Word in you, according to the Parable of the Sower, you can bear the fruit of Jesus Christ, 30-, 60-, and 100-fold. He said, "Ask whatsoever you will" (Mark 11:24). What happens when you put the Word in you is that it changes your will. **(Php.2:13) ... it is God who worketh in you both to will and to work, for his good pleasure.** The *Contemporary English Version* says, "God is working in you to make you willing and able to obey him." That's how you get set free. **(Joh.8:36) If therefore the Son shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.** That's how you get set free. He gives you His Will, and when you have His Will, you're free, because everything you want to do is what He wants to do, and He gets what He wants. So freedom comes from putting the Word in you, abiding in Him, and Him abiding in you. This really is Good News!

**(Joh.15:8) Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; and so shall ye be my disciples...** Notice that a "disciple," a *mathétés*, is "a learner and a follower." If you can't learn from Jesus and you can't follow Him and you're all caught-up in an idolatrous institution, with an idolatrous leader in the Nicolaitan error, who thinks he's the head of the church, then you're not going to bear fruit and you're not going to be a disciple. Preachers are not to make disciples of themselves; they're to make disciples of Jesus. They're to point you to the Word, to show you how you should be a disciple, a learner and a follower, of Jesus. Praise the Lord!

Everything is in Christ. Everything you need is in Him. **(Eph.1:3) Blessed be the God and Father of our**

***Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly [places] in Christ...*** Wow! Every spiritual blessing has already been given to us. As I've pointed out before, a spiritual blessing is not necessarily not a physical blessing. It's a spiritual blessing: a blessing from the Spirit and in the Spirit. God wants you to have all of your needs met. ***(Php.4:19) And my God shall supply every need of yours according to his riches in glory in Christ Jesus.*** He wants your needs met: spiritual, physical, and emotional. And as you see, if you abide in Him and put the Word in your heart, you can ask whatever you want and it will be done because what you want is what He wants.

Well, since every spiritual blessing is in the "heavenly [places]," where are the "heavenly [places]"? They are in Christ. Note again it says, "He hath (That's past tense.) blessed us with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly [places]," which are where? In Christ. When you abide in Christ, you have every spiritual blessing and you have your needs met. God has put all of your provision there. You must go there to get it. Many people want to live and walk outside of Christ. They want to think outside of Christ, and then they wonder why in the world God does not do for them these things that He says in His Word He will do. It's because these things are in the heavenly places. You can't "walk on the earth," spiritually speaking, and "walk in heavenly places" at the same time. Either you're walking worldly and earthly, or you're walking heavenly. If you're in Christ, you're walking in heavenly places because He is the heavenly place. And when you abide in Him, you can have what you need, because that's where it's provided. It's not provided outside of Him. He hasn't given it to you.

Remember, ***(Gal.3:16) Now to Abraham were the promises spoken, and to his seed. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ.***

So those people who say that if God gives you a gift, He can't take it back, they don't understand that He doesn't have to take it back, because when you step out of Him, you lose it. You're abiding in Him, first of all, through your faith, and second of all, through your actions since faith without works is dead (James 2:17,20,26). If you walk by faith in Him, you have all these promises, because that's abiding in Him, too. Then you have all of these promises; they're yours. However, if you're in willful rebellion, know that the only promise you have is this: ***(Heb.10:26) For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more a sacrifice for sins, (27) but a certain fearful expectation of judgment, and a fierceness of fire which shall devour the adversaries.*** There's your promise. If you're walking outside of Him, the promise you have is that God's going to whip you. That's His promise.

***(Eph.1:3) Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly [places] in Christ: (4) even as he chose us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blemish before him in love.*** You see, you weren't an after-thought at all. He had you in Mind before Adam ever fell. Did He know Adam was going to fall? Yes, but He chose you in Him, meaning that He knew you needed a Savior, and He provided that Savior before Adam ever fell. Why did God go on with the process? He did that

because fallen people who are saved have a great appreciation for God and they know what's wrong with walking according to the world. They've tried it, they failed, and they understand that God has provided better. God doesn't want ignorant people; He wants people who are trying, and let me tell you, the "fall" is a training (Genesis Chapter 3). Yes, He knew about the "fall." We're not in plan B, we're still in plan A. God doesn't make plan B's.

***(Eph.1:4) Even as he chose us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be (He wants us to be something.) holy and without blemish before him in love. He wants you to be this. The reason we abide in Him is to have His holiness and to be without blemish, and if you put the Word in you, the Word will empower you to walk "holy and without blemish before him in love." If you starve your spiritual man, you will die. He needs the Word of God to be fed. He's created out of the Word of God.***

### *Servants or Sons*

***(Eph.1:5) Having foreordained us unto adoption as sons... Glory to God! It's "sons," not "servants." We don't start out as sons, we start out as children, and Paul said that if you're a child, you're a servant, but not a son. (Gal.4:1) ***But I say that so long as the heir is a child, he differeth nothing from a bondservant though he is lord of all; (2) but is under guardians and stewards until the day appointed of the father. (3) So we also, when we were children, were held in bondage under the rudiments of the world: (4) but when the fulness of the time came, God sent******

***forth his Son, born of a woman, born under the law, (5) that he might redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons. (6) And because ye are sons, God sent forth the Spirit of his Son into our hearts, crying, Abba, Father. (7) So that thou art no longer a bondservant, but a son; and if a son, then an heir through God.*** Do you know the difference between a servant and a son? A servant serves because he has to; a son serves because he loves his Father. He wants to serve his Father. He wants to progress His Father's Kingdom. He wants to do that, and God has to give you a change of nature to be that kind of a person, a person that doesn't want to offend your Father. You don't care who's looking or who's not looking, you want to serve your Father.

***(Eph.1:5) Having foreordained us unto adoption as sons through Jesus Christ unto himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, (6) to the praise of the glory of his grace, which he freely bestowed on us in the Beloved*** (Look at that: He freely bestowed His grace "in the Beloved."): ***(7) in whom*** (Again, all of this is "in the Beloved.") ***we have our redemption...*** Your redemption is in Christ. Abide there by faith and the works that come from your faith, because faith without works is dead. ***(Jas.2:17) Even so, faith, if it have not works, is dead in itself. (18) Yea, a man will say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: show me thy faith apart from [thy] works, and I by my works will show thee [my] faith.*** You can't prove you have faith unless you have works that agree with that faith.

***(Eph.1:7) In whom we have our redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of our trespass-***

*es, according to the riches of his grace, (8) which he made to abound toward us in all wisdom and prudence, (9) making known unto us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he purposed in him (There it is again.) (10) unto a dispensation of the fulness of the times, to sum up all [things] in Christ (The word, “things” wasn’t there in the original Greek. There’s no numeric pattern in it. It should always be italicized and/or in brackets. This properly reads “to sum up all in Christ.”), *the things in the heavens, and the things upon the earth; in him, [I say,] (11) in whom also we were made a heritage, having been foreordained (We’re going to find out who was foreordained and who wasn’t.) according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his will; (12) to the end that we should be unto the praise of his glory, we who had before hoped in Christ.**

*(Eph.1:13) In whom ye also, having heard the word of the truth, the gospel of your salvation,— in whom, having also believed, ye were sealed with the Holy Spirit of promise (Be sure to receive the Holy Spirit, because {Act.1:8} ... *ye shall receive power, when the Holy Spirit is come upon you.*), (14) *which is an earnest of our inheritance...* The Greek word there for “earnest” is *arrabón* and it means “a large part of the payment, given in advance as a security that the whole will be paid afterwards” ... “full security backed by the purchaser who supplies sufficient proof they will fulfill the entire pledge (promise).” Saints, you want the supernatural inheritance that God gives to His sons. Remember His Son, Jesus Christ, received the Holy Spirit that came*

upon Him (John 1:32-33). Was He saved before that? Certainly He was, and so is everybody who receives the Holy Spirit, because God doesn't give the Holy Spirit to unsaved people. He won't put the Holy Spirit in an unclean vessel. ***(Act.5:32) And we are witnesses of these things; and [so is] the Holy Spirit, whom God hath given to them that obey him.*** So we have to obey Him and we have to abide in Him to receive this awesome provision that God has offered. ***(Eph.1:13) In whom ye also, having heard the word of the truth, the gospel of your salvation,—in whom, having also believed, ye were sealed with the Holy Spirit of promise (14) which is an earnest of our inheritance unto the redemption of [God's] own possession, unto the praise of his glory.***

### *Delivered from the Power of Darkness*

One of the most important things to understand about being in Him is found here. ***(1Jn.1:5) And this is the message which we have heard from him and announce unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all.*** If you want to know what part of you is not in Him, it's that part that's in darkness; it's not a part of Him because He is only Light. There's no darkness in Him. ***(6) If we say that we have fellowship with him and walk in the darkness, we lie, and do not the truth.*** We know what "darkness" is. It's walking according to the prince of the powers of this world. ***(Eph.2:1) And you [did he make alive,] when ye were dead through your trespasses and sins, (2) wherein ye once walked according to the course of this world,***

**according to the prince of the powers of the air, of the spirit that now worketh in the sons of disobedience; (3) among whom we also all once lived in the lust of our flesh, doing the desires of the flesh and of the mind, and were by nature children of wrath, even as the rest.** In Christ, He delivered you out of the power of darkness. **(Col.1:12) Giving thanks unto the Father, who made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light; (13) who delivered us out of the power of darkness, and translated us into the kingdom of the Son of his love.** If you walk in darkness, either you don't know that, or you don't believe that, or your lusts have just drawn you away.

**(1Jn.1:6) If we say that we have fellowship with Him** (I once heard a man say that he was "taking Jesus with him," but I knew where he was going and I knew Jesus wasn't going with him.) **and walk in the darkness, we lie and do not the truth: (7) but if we walk in the light, as he is in the light...** How is He "in the light"? He walks in the Truth. He walks according to the Word, however, ignorance is an excuse in the Kingdom, because there are lots of things you don't know about but God doesn't hold it against you. **(Jas. 4:17) To him therefore that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin.** That's a really good deal, because God doesn't hold against you everything that the Old Testament held against you in that Old Covenant. It was a very hard Covenant. This is a Good News Covenant. He doesn't hold your ignorance against you, but there are some things you can't claim to be ignorant of because your conscience tells you differently, and He does hold you accountable to your conscience. And

here's another thing: If you don't love your brother, you don't love Him. **(1Jn.4:20) *If a man say, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar: for he that loveth not his brother whom he hath seen, cannot love God whom he hath not seen.*** That's what He says.

**(1Jn.1:7) *But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus his Son cleanseth us from all sin.*** So, if you're not abiding in Him, if you're not having fellowship with one another, you're in darkness and there should be no communion, none, between light and darkness. **(2Co.6:14) *Be not unequally yoked with unbelievers: for what fellowship have righteousness and iniquity? or what communion hath light with darkness?*** You read the Word to find out what is "light" and what is "darkness." For instance, there are people claiming to be Christian, who are **(2Ti.3:5) *holding a form of godliness, but having denied the power thereof. From these also turn away.*** That's darkness! You don't want to "walk" there. You can't have fellowship with Him if you're walking there. You will grow just so far and then you'll never grow past that, because if you try to grow past that, those people will chasten you. They'll ostracize you.

You have to go where you can grow into the Image of Jesus, where people believe that that's what you're supposed to do, where people believe that you're supposed to bear the fruit of Jesus. But notice, if you have fellowship with Him and you have fellowship with one another, "the blood of Jesus his Son cleanseth us from all sin." If you don't get along with your brothers, if you don't have peace with your brothers, one of you doesn't have the right spirit, or maybe

both of you. One spirit you don't want to have is the spirit of unforgiveness, because if you have unforgiveness, you're unforgiven. Jesus said, **(Mat.6:14) For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. (15) But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.** If you're holding bitterness and unforgiveness against your brother, if you're criticizing your brother, if you're not believing that God saved and reconciled him just like He saved and reconciled you, if you're not having faith for your brother, you're not going to have faith for yourself.

### *The Importance of Confessing Sin*

**(1Jn.1:8) If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves** (That is, of course, if you're doing a sin.), **and the truth is not in us. (9) If we confess our sins...** This is the most important thing. You have to stay "confessed up" or you're going to fall away, because the burden of sin will overwhelm you. It has to be gotten rid of. The very nature of it needs to be washed out of you. If you're too proud to do this, you're going to fail. You're going to fall away. **(1Jn.1:9) If we confess our sins, he is faithful and righteous to forgive us our sins** (Notice the "If" there. Pay close attention to that. Circle this verse. It's the most important verse to continue to walk with God.), **and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. (10) If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us. (1Jn.2:1) My little children, these things write I unto you that ye may not sin.** He's telling you here's a way to stop sin.

First, cleanse yourself of all unrighteousness by confessing your sin. How are you going to not sin if you have unrighteousness? You need to be cleansed of unrighteousness by confessing your sin in order to not sin. Unrighteousness is what causes sin, so we're talking about the very nature of sin, not about some particular sin that you have done that's held against you. It is the nature of sin in you.

***(1Jn.2:1) My little children, these things write I unto you that ye may not sin. And if any man sin, we have an Advocate...*** This Greek word is *paraklétos* and it means “lawyer; someone giving evidence that stands up in court; a legal advocate ... who makes the right judgment call; helper, comforter.” It’s the same word used for the Holy Spirit. ***(1Jn.2:1) My little children, these things write I unto you that ye may not sin. And if any man sin, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous*** (Jesus Christ Himself is our “Lawyer,” our “Helper.”): ***(2) and He is the propitiation for our sins*** (He is the covering, the atoning Sacrifice, for our sins of ignorance or failure. When you’ve failed, and you’re grieved about it, then you have His covering.); ***and not for ours only, but also for the whole world***. Anyone who wants to come to Him can come. However, when you want to come, it’s because God worked in you to will and to do of His good pleasure (Philippians 2:13). ***(Joh.15:16) Ye did not choose me, but I chose you, and appointed you, that ye should go and bear fruit...*** That’s what He says. ***(1Jn.2:3) And hereby we know that we know him, if we keep his commandments. (4) He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him.***

Let's look at Revelation 2, where it's also talking about falling away. **(Rev.2:1) To the angel of the church in Ephesus write: These things saith he that holdeth the seven stars in his right hand, he that walketh in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks: (2) I know thy works, and thy toil and patience, and that thou canst not bear evil men (And we shouldn't bear them, either.), and didst try them that call themselves apostles (People who fall away because of their pride and so forth, many of them are calling themselves prophets and apostles, but we need to test them. They need to have the signs of an apostle.), and they are not, and didst find them false; (3) and thou hast patience and didst bear for my name's sake, and hast not grown weary. People do get tired when they don't keep their eyes on the Lord and His promises, which pick you up and give you courage and faith. We must keep our eyes on Jesus and the promises that He's made. Don't get worried or anxious, because the devil likes to wear you down and then, before you know it, you're fallen-away.**

*Don't Let Your Candlestick be Removed*

**(Rev.2:4) But I have [this] against thee, that thou didst leave thy first love.** Yes, a lot of people have started out really in love with Jesus and wanting to know all about Him, but it doesn't take long before they've been side-tracked by these false apostles or false pastors or false leaders. **(5) Remember therefore whence thou art fallen, and repent and do the first works...** The "first works" were wanting to know what it is to please the Lord. You wanted to know how to obey the Lord but you

probably didn't read enough of the Book to find out what a church looked like, so you went to something that you thought was a church where, sadly, you were led astray and wasted a whole bunch of time. Go back! Go back and be obedient to the Lord as when you first entered into Christ, before you were led astray by these charlatans who told you that you didn't have to be obedient.

***(Rev.2:5) Remember therefore whence thou art fallen, and repent and do the first works; or else I come to thee, and will move thy candlestick (The Greek word translated "candlestick" denotes "an oil-fed, portable lamp.") out of its place, except thou repent.*** There it is again: That's a falling-away. He is the One Who stands in the midst of the candlesticks. He is the One Who keeps your "oil-fed, portable lamp," lit. You have to have fellowship with Him, and He is the Word. The best way to pray, folks, is when you read the Word. If you see something you like, then pray it. You can read the Word and pray the same time. Whenever you run across something you know you need, or are lacking in, anywhere you see a promise, stop and pray. Stop, repent if you need to, and pray. Oh, thank you, Father, for pouring the oil of Your Spirit into the lamps of our portable tabernacles. Amen.

***(Rev.2:6) But this thou hast, that thou hatest the works of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate.*** The Nicolaitans started out with a priestly order, like that of the Old Testament, where there is a priest between you and God, and that's what Catholicism started doing. There is a priest over the church and between you and God and so forth, and the Protestants picked it right up because they didn't fall far from the tree. They picked it right up and now the pastor is the head of the church for them, too, but

there's nothing more false in the whole Scriptures. That is the Nicolaitan error, which He said He hated, and that the church in Ephesus also hated.

***(Rev.2:7) He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith to the churches. To him that overcometh, to him will I give to eat of the tree of life...***

Between Adam and the "tree of life" there was the "tree of the knowledge of good and evil." ***(Gen.2:16) And the Lord God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: (17) but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.*** Well, as we know, Adam failed that test and he had to be removed from the garden lest he eat of the "tree of life" (Genesis 3:22-24). However,

we who have been born-again, have the power to do something with the knowledge of good and evil. The natural man doesn't have that; we who are born from above have that.

***(1Co.2:14) Now the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him; and he cannot know them, because they are spiritually judged.*** Therefore, we are to study the knowledge of good and evil in the Scriptures, not necessarily what men say is good or evil, but according to what the Scriptures say. We are to study it and know it. ***(Rev.2:7)***

***He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith to the churches. To him that overcometh*** (That's somebody who studied it; they know it, and they're obeying it.), ***to him will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the Paradise of God.*** Thank You, Father!

Bless us, oh God, in Jesus' Name. Bless us, Father. Pour forth of Your Spirit upon us. Lord, let us take your exhorta-

tions and act upon them. Lord, let us pray to You, because You're willing, always, to give us grace and to give us favor if we will repent, humble ourselves, confess our sins, and ask You. Lord, many people don't spend any time asking You, so they get what they ask for; they get nothing. You said, "Ye have not because ye ask not." Thank You for having mercy upon us, oh God, delivering us from evil, giving us Your awesome grace. Amen!

## CHAPTER SEVEN

### God's Everlasting Covenant

#### *Idolatry and False Doctrine*

Father, we ask You to give wisdom and to give understanding concerning the dangers of falling away, and what we can do to avoid them. We thank You so much for your mercy towards us, giving us grace in our life, working in us to will and to do of your good pleasure. In Jesus' Name, amen.

I'd like to continue with our study from the previous chapter, where we started looking at the letters to the seven churches, since there's so much in them about the causes for falling away. And I do believe that the letters to the churches are also letters to certain kinds of Christians, which are symbolized by each church. Of course, I know that there's a prophetic value there, too (Revelation 1:3), but people should be able to recognize themselves in one of these churches.

***(Rev.2:8) And to the angel of the church in Smyrna write: These things saith the first and the last, who was dead, and [lived] again: (9) I know thy tribulation, and thy poverty (but thou art rich)...*** Yes, they are rich in the ways of the Kingdom.  
***(Jas.2:5) Hearken, my beloved brethren; did not God choose them that are poor as to the world [to be] rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which he promised to them that love him?*** And, yes, they are beloved.

***(Rev.2:8) And to the angel of the church in Smyrna write: These things saith the first and the***

***last, who was dead, and [lived] again: (9) I know thy tribulation, and thy poverty (but thou art rich), and the blasphemy of them that say they are Jews, and they are not, but are a synagogue of Satan.*** It's interesting that this is addressing the church, but he is speaking about the church error, in which there are Jews who claim to be Jews, yet they are not Jews according to the New Covenant, the New Testament. It's important to understand this. Unless you're born-again, you're not a member of the New Covenant, nor are you a Jew according to the New Testament. We're told, ***(Rom.2:28) For he is not a Jew who is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision which is outward in the flesh: (29) but he is a Jew who is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.*** The Jews had a "letter" Covenant; it was according to the letter. The Christians have a spiritual Covenant; it is a spiritual fulfillment of the Old Testament type. We don't inherit their literal promises; we're not replacing them in a literal way. Their land is not our "land." Our "land" is a spiritual land, as we were taught (John 17:14,16, John 18:36; 1 John 2:15). So if you're a member of the New Covenant, you have been circumcised in heart, which is having the "flesh" cut away from your heart. When He says that they are a "synagogue of Satan," it's obviously identifying physical Jews and He's telling the church that these people are not Jews. They're claiming to be Jews, but they are not. They are a synagogue of Satan. Why would they be a synagogue of Satan? It's because they're not born from above. If you're born from above (John 3:3), you're circumcised in heart. It doesn't matter if you're a physical Jew or a Gentile.

We can see this borne out again very well here. **(Rom.9:25) As he saith also in Hosea, I will call that my people, which was not my people** (That's because His original people were all physical Jews.); **And her beloved, that was not beloved.** (So He loves someone that is not a Jew and was not called "my people.") **(26) And it shall be, [that] in the place where it was said unto them, Ye are not my people** (That would have been the Gentiles.), **There shall they be called sons of the living God. (27) And Isaiah crieth concerning Israel, If the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, it is the remnant that shall be saved.** He's talking about natural Israel there; only a remnant of natural Israel "shall be saved," however, we know that "all Israel" shall be saved who is grafted into the "Olive Tree" (Romans 11:26). Notice, too, as we read on down, that there was still a remnant of natural Israel that was left in the Olive Tree when God added the Gentile church into the Olive Tree, and that there is a falling-away among the Jews until the fullness of the Gentiles comes in (Romans 11:25).

**(Rom.11:19) Thou wilt say then, Branches were broken off** (Those "branches" were natural Israel.), **that I might be grafted in. (20) Well; by their unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by thy faith. Be not highminded, but fear: (21) for if God spared not the natural branches, neither will he spare thee.** In other words, if you walk in unbelief concerning His Word, you also shall be cut-off. **(22) Behold then the goodness and severity of God: toward them that fell, severity; but toward thee, God's goodness, if thou continue in his goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off. (23) And they also, if**

***they continue not in their unbelief, shall be grafted in: for God is able to graft them in again. (24) For if thou wast cut out of that which is by nature a wild olive tree, and wast grafted contrary to nature into a good olive tree; how much more shall these, which are the natural [branches], be grafted into their own olive tree? (25) For I would not, brethren, have you ignorant of this mystery, lest ye be wise in your own conceits, that a hardening in part hath befallen Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in; (26) and so all Israel shall be saved: even as it is written, *There shall come out of Zion the Deliverer; He shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob: (27) And this is my covenant unto them, When I shall take away their sins.* So we should fear, lest we walk outside the bounds of God's Covenant, His Word to us. Many do, and they see no problem with that, whatsoever, but we know it to be extremely dangerous because we're going to be judged according to our works.***

***(Rev.2:8) And to the angel of the church in Smyrna write: These things saith the first and the last, who was dead, and [lived] again: (9) I know thy tribulation, and thy poverty (but thou art rich), and the blasphemy of them that say they are Jews, and they are not, but are a synagogue of Satan. (10) Fear not the things which thou art about to suffer...* Yes, we will suffer, although many people falsely think we won't have to suffer. We will suffer, and that suffering, of course, is losing our life: It's the "old man" dying and the "new man" taking his place (2 Corinthians 4:16-17; Colossians 3:8-10; Romans 13:13-14).**

Whatever we have to go through to lose our old life and gain our new life, it is necessary, and it is suffering. You have to suffer the loss of your carnal life and the carnal way of living. You need to remember that there's an important difference between those who are "sons" of God and those who are "children" of God. "Sons" of God follow the Spirit of God (Romans 8:14); "children" do not. And how does a "child" become a "son"? ***(Rom.8:16) The Spirit himself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are children of God: (17) and if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if*** (Again, there's an "if" because this is conditional.) ***so be that we suffer with [him,] that we may be also glorified with [him].*** We must suffer with Him to be glorified with Him. We're suffering the loss of our old life in order to gain our new life. Jesus Himself said that if we lose our life, we gain our life (Matthew 16:25; Luke 9:24; John 12:25; etc.) and it's very important that we keep this in mind. We're here to die, just as our Lord came to die. Jesus came to lose His life (Matthew 20:28; Mark 10:45; 1 Timothy 2:6; etc.)

***(Rom.8:18) For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed to us-ward. (19) For the earnest expectation of the creation waiteth for the revealing of the sons of God.*** So the suffering is in order that God may manifest His Sonship in us, and the whole creation is waiting for this. ***(20) For the creation was subjected to vanity, not of its own will, but by reason of him who subjected it, in hope (21) that the creation itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the liberty of the glory of the children of God. (22) For we know***

***that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now.***

Christ is our Example of suffering. ***(1Pet.4:1) Forasmuch then as Christ suffered in the flesh...*** He went to His Cross; His flesh was crucified. He said, ***(Mat.10:38) ... he that doth not take his cross and follow after me, is not worthy of me.*** And also, ***(Luk.14:27) Whosoever doth not bear his own cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple.*** That means we, too, must go to a spiritual cross of death to self. ***(2Co.4:16) Wherefore we faint not; but though our outward man is decaying, yet our inward man is renewed day by day.*** As you die, you live.

***(1Pet.4:1) Forasmuch then as Christ suffered in the flesh, arm ye yourselves also with the same mind; for he that hath suffered in the flesh hath ceased from sin...*** There is no law against somebody who has “ceased from sin” (Romans 8:1-4). Suffering in the flesh gives a person the fear of God and it’s a proof that they’re losing their life. A person losing their carnal life is not going to fall away. Suffering is the normal Christian life, and we should expect it to be that.

***(1Pet.4:1) Forasmuch then as Christ suffered in the flesh, arm ye yourselves also with the same mind; for he that hath suffered in the flesh hath ceased from sin; (2) that ye no longer should live the rest of your time in the flesh to the lusts of men, but to the will of God.*** This is extremely important, because if we walk after the flesh, we must die (Romans 8:13). That’s a falling-away, isn’t it? How do we avoid the falling-away? The flesh has to die, because it will do nothing but try to subvert you the rest of your life. And according

to this, we don't have to live the rest of our "time in the flesh to the lusts of men, but to the will of God." We have to live the crucified life. People grow very quickly once they realize that their cross is to deny themselves and follow Jesus. Most religion doesn't teach denying self, but then, people don't grow up in God through most religion, either. So we see that this must be done. It is a suffering, but it must be done.

***(Rev.2:10) Fear not the things which thou art about to suffer: behold, the devil is about to cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried...*** We know of somebody who was cast into prison to be a type and shadow for us, and that was Joseph (Genesis 39:20), who came out of that prison to become the second ruler of the kingdom (Genesis 41:40). He represents Jesus, and he also represents the Man-child in our day. The Man-child company in these days is suffering at the hands of wicked men, and it is for the good purpose of their crucifixion. That will prepare the Man-child to lead the Woman into the wilderness (Revelation 12:5-6), but the Woman in the wilderness still needs to have the same fruit of Jesus Christ. That means there is a time for the Woman in the wilderness to also suffer in the exact same way, to suffer by being "cast into prison." You know, there are lots of things we can't do. We're limited by the "bars" of the Word of God from doing them, because obeying the Word crucifies us. It restrains the "old man" to the point that he dies. Joseph was prepared through a death to rule, and Jesus preached to the souls in prison (Psalm 68:18; Ephesians 4:8) until He was resurrected to rule, and now He reigns (Isaiah 9:7; Luke 1:33; etc.) That's a parable for us. We, too, all of us, not just the Man-child but the "Woman" who goes into the

wilderness (Revelation 12:6), will also be going through the exact same thing that the Man-child has gone through, at the hands of wicked people (Revelation 12:13-17).

***(Rev.2:10) Fear not the things which thou art about to suffer: behold, the devil is about to cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days. Be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee the crown of life.*** Notice the condition here. People falsely think, as we pointed out, that salvation has been put into their hand when, actually, salvation is in Christ. And we know that when Christ went to the Cross, we went with Him as far as the sacrifice is concerned. ***(Gal.2:20) I have been crucified with Christ; and it is no longer I that live, but Christ living in me: and that [life] which I now live in the flesh I live in faith, [the faith] which is in the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself up for me.*** However, the fact is that we still need to do this in the physical realm. We still need to go to our cross, but we reckon that it was done at the Cross. We believe we have received, as Jesus taught us (Mark 11:24). We need to be “faithful unto death,” the death of self, and, if necessary, the death of this old fleshly body. For some, it will take that much for them to enter into the Kingdom. But we, at the very least, have to die to self. Self is the enemy of God that must be crucified, and that’s what we’re here to do. We need to learn that lesson well.

So as we read, ***(1Pe.4:2) ... ye no longer should live the rest of your time in the flesh to the lusts of men, but to the will of God.*** Once you learn how to cooperate with God, you can do this fairly quickly, and then you’re in a position where God can use you. You get the

“crown of life” for death; you enter into God’s Life through death, death to self. Before that, you’re not trustworthy because you’re living after the flesh. You have many idols to distract you, many rulers besides God but, of course, once you’re crucified, there is only one Ruler, and that’s the Lord. When He is the Head, there’s not much chance that you’re going to fail God because it’s the flesh that walks astray; it’s not the spiritual man.

### *The Second Death*

***(Rev.2:11) He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith to the churches. He that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death.***

“Overcoming” is overcoming the things that we’re reading about. It’s obvious that when people fall away, they’re not overcoming, but we’re called to be overcomers. There are no promises in the letters to the churches for those who are not overcomers, therefore, we must lose our life. Just as our Lord took up His Cross, we are here to take up our cross and follow Him.

***(Rev.2:11) He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith to the churches. He that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death.*** What

is the “second death”? Let’s keep reading and we’ll find out.

***(Rev.20:11) And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat upon it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them. (12) And I saw the dead, the great and the small, standing before the throne; and books were opened: and another book was opened, which is [the book] of life: and the dead***

***were judged out of the things which were written in the books, according to their works.*** Everybody's going to be judged according to their works. You may say, "David, I thought we are judged according to our faith." No, faith is manifested through works. Faith without works is dead (James 2:17). The proof of faith is works. If a person believes, they will walk with the Lord. If they don't believe, they won't walk with the Lord. Therefore, all that God has to do to judge our faith is to judge our works. That's why it says, "according to their works."

Those people who think they can live any way they want to live and still call themselves a "Christian" or "believer," they don't believe that their sins were taken away. If they did believe that their sins were taken away, they would constantly be being taken away and it would be seen in how they live. No, their faith is hollow; they're just "accepting the Lord," but there's nothing about "accepting the Lord" in the Bible. We're commanded to repent and believe the Gospel (Matthew 3:1,4:17; Mark 1:15; Acts 2:38; etc.) The Greek word for "repent" means to "change your mind" and believe what God says. This is what religion refuses to do, and that's why they're in rebellion, and that's why there's a great falling-away. Even though religion teaches that every one of those people will be in heaven, it makes no difference because they're teaching a lie (1 Corinthians 6:9-10). There is a great falling-away, and it's their fault. The blood is on the Harlot (Matthew 23:35; Revelation 18:24). ***(Rev.17:6) And in her was found the blood of prophets and of saints, and of all that have been slain upon the earth.***

***(Rev.20:13) And the sea gave up the dead that were in it; and death and Hades gave up the dead***

***that were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. (14) And death and Hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death, [even] the lake of fire. (15) And if any was not found written in the book of life, he was cast into the lake of fire.*** How do you get into the Book of Life? Well, according to that text, it has everything to do with your works. Then how do we change our works? We do that through the Blood of the Lamb. We accept the fact that we were crucified with Him and now it's no longer we who live, but it's Christ Who lives in us (Galatians 2:20). And our good confession is accepted by the High Priest of our Confession (Hebrews 3:1), and that is Jesus Christ. He is the One Who gives us authority over the old flesh. He is the One (***Php.2:13***) ... ***who worketh in you both to will and to work, for his good pleasure.*** That's not true of everybody who claims to be a "Christian." Many don't have the Will of God in them; they have their own will, which is self-will. That's why "self" has to die.

***(Rev.2:12) And to the angel of the church in Pergamum write: These things saith he that hath the sharp two-edged sword: (13) I know where thou dwellest, [even] where Satan's throne is; and thou holdest fast my name...*** That is, of course, what it takes not to fall away. (Now this is not a study of Revelation, this is a study of the falling-away, so there are things I'm going to skip over in order to emphasize the things that could possibly cause you to fall away.) We know that the word "name" in the Greek is *onoma*, which means "nature, character, and authority." We hold fast to the real Jesus, His Nature, His Character, and His Authority. I would say that

a lot of the church has denied that. They have created a new “Jesus” in these days, as Paul said (2 Corinthians 11:3-4; Galatians 1:6-9) and, of course, that only makes you anti-Christ. A new Jesus makes you anti-Christ. The prefix “anti” not only means “against,” it also means “in the place of” because you’ve replaced the Jesus of the Bible with the Jesus of your religion. We need to learn not to go astray from the real Jesus.

***(Rev.2:13) I know where thou dwellest, [even] where Satan’s throne is; and thou holdest fast my name, and didst not deny my faith...*** As we’ve seen, this is so important because “he that endureth to the end” in faith (Matthew 10:22), is going to have what they’re believing for, by the grace of God. Don’t deny the faith. Many people do deny the faith every time they speak, since they speak totally contrary to the promises of God. The Bible says, ***(Rom.10:9) ... if thou shalt confess with thy mouth Jesus [as] Lord, and shalt believe in thy heart that God raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.*** So we need to “confess” with our mouth, we need to speak, what the Bible says about us. The word “confess” is the Greek word *homologeō*, which means “to speak the same thing; to speak the same as.” We are told to say what God says, ***(1Pe.4:11) If any man speaketh, [speaking] as it were oracles of God.*** And when we say what God says, then we are speaking oracles. *Strong’s* defines “oracle” as “a divine declaration; a statement originating from God.” In other words, to “speak as an oracle” is to “speak as God’s mouthpiece.”

We need to say what God says. ***(Mat.10:32) Every one therefore who shall confess me before men, him will I also confess before my Father who is***

**in heaven.** It's very important that you confess your salvation, your deliverance, your healing, all these things, in order to have them. **(Rom.10:10) For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.** "Salvation," *soteria*, is very big, contrary to popular opinion. *Strong's* says it's "God's rescue which delivers believers out of destruction and into His safety." It's the salvation of your soul, salvation of your body, salvation of, or from, your circumstances. Salvation is needed in all things when you walk on this earth.

**(Rev.2:13) I know where thou dwellest, [even] where Satan's throne is; and thou holdest fast my name, and didst not deny my faith, even in the days of Antipas my witness, my faithful one, who was killed among you, where Satan dwelleth.** Yes, of course, some will die. Some will be martyred. We're all going to be spiritual martyrs if we're going to make it into the Kingdom. The old man is going to be crucified, so we're all going to be spiritual martyrs, and some will be physical martyrs, too, but if they stay faithful unto death, He will give them a "crown of life" (Revelation 2:10).

**(Rev.2:14) But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there some that hold the teaching of Balaam...** We know Balaam was a hireling (Numbers 22:16-17; 2 Peter 2:15; Jude 1:11). Balak hired him, and he was tempted and lusted after the things that Balak had to offer him. There are many, many hirelings out there that do what they do for profit, and when a person is perverted in that way, you can't trust anything they say or teach. If all they have their eyes on is the money, the gain, and the ego trip, they're not trustworthy; they have no business being

in the ministry at all and you shouldn't be following them. It's sad, but there are many Balaams out there.

### *Sacrificing to Idols*

***(Rev.2:14) But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there some that hold the teaching of Balaam, who taught Balak to cast a stumblingblock before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed to idols, and to commit fornication.*** What is it to “sacrifice” to “idols”? Anything can be an idol if it is more important to you than God. When you put it before God, if you serve it, if your money is wound-up in it, if your time is wound-up in it, then you're robbing God of the time that a disciple would spend with Him and money that would be going toward doing His work. One way or the other, it's a sacrifice. You can be sacrificing the old life, or you can be sacrificing the new life. So in the church at Pergamum, they were sacrificing things to idols. We are told, ***(1Jn.2:15) Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him.*** That's the same way with idols. However much you love an idol, it's that much that you do not love the Father.

Who or what do you serve, or “sacrifice,” your life to? Are you sacrificing your life to one, or even more, idols? It can be people whom you put before God, it can be sports, it can be cars, it can be houses, it can be slaving away to have all the material things that you want. Think about those disciples and how they lived their lives. They were very self-sacrificing people. All they wanted was enough to keep their body running so they could serve God. They were con-

tent with food and raiment (1 Timothy 6:8), with which the Bible says we also are to be content. Some people are never content; they want to get ahead. They go to college so that they can have a higher income so that they can have a better life, but when they go to college, they turn into pagans because most of the teachers are pagans. It's a sad thing: Parents send their kids off to college and they come back totally anti-Christ. They should have paid attention to what is more important to God, which is that their children learn to serve God.

***(1Jn.2:15) Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. (16) For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh and the lust of the eyes and the vainglory of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. (17) And the world passeth away (That includes all those who worshipped the world and sacrificed to it.), and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever.*** So, what are you sacrificing? Everybody is sacrificing their life for something, and if you're sacrificing your spiritual life for the things of the world, you're making a major mistake. ***(1Co.10:14) Wherefore, my beloved, flee from idolatry. (15) I speak as to wise men; judge ye what I say. (16) The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not a communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not a communion of the body of Christ?*** "Communion" means "having in common." Do you spend a lot of time with people who are idolators? Do you have things in common with people who are idolators?

In the New Testament, we are stewards, not owners, of the things that we have, but most "Christians" act as though

they're owners, instead of being stewards. We don't want to have people around us who are idolators, people who have so many things more important to them than God. Oh, they soothe their soul by going to church on Sunday where they sit and listen to a little moralizing, and then they go back to serving the world. They're sacrificing their spiritual life in order to serve idols. **(1Co.10:17) Seeing that we, who are many, are one bread, one body: for we all partake of the one bread.** Are we going to pollute God's body by bringing in the lusts of the world, the waste of a lifetime that's spent in the world? Why is it that people can sit on a pew for forty, even fifty, years and never grow up into the Image of Jesus Christ? It's because they've given themselves over to idols. Their idols are many, and their idols are everywhere.

Scripture tells us very plainly how we are to live. **(Rom.12:1) I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, to present your bodies a living sacrifice** (Are you presenting your body as a living sacrifice to the Lord and to His work? Or are you sacrificing your body to the world and to the love of the world and the things of the world?), **holy, acceptable to God, [which is] your spiritual service. (2) And be not fashioned according to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is the good and acceptable and perfect will of God.** So now we see what the real sacrifice is supposed to be. It is a sacrifice of our own mind and thoughts and actions because we give in to God's mind and thoughts and actions. We make this body do what is in agreement with the Word. We should not sacrifice our spiritual, higher, life to this world.

People can be idols in your life, as Jesus said.

***(Mat.10:37) He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me.*** After you come into the Kingdom and you're of age, you are called upon to follow your heavenly Father, your Lord, Jesus Christ. You're not called to follow your earthly father or mother; you're called to honor them, but not to follow them. They may not know what you know and so you would, of course, be an idolator if you followed them instead of Jesus. ***(Mat.10:38) And he that doth not take his cross and follow after me, is not worthy of me.*** ***(39) He that findeth his life shall lose it; and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it.***

People think that the Lord saved us in order for us to have freedom to do what we want to do. Not so. We are to lose our old self-life, that selfish, willful, life. We are bond-servants of Jesus Christ, and we're supposed to love being His bond-servants. If you're not an idolator, then you love the Lord and you want to serve Him and it is your joy to serve Him. If you're just a religious person, then you go to church on Sunday and afterward you go on out and do your own thing again, because that's where you are. You're an idolator; you're loving the world and the things of the world and not giving-in to what the Lord has called you to be and to do.

Father, we ask that You will open the eyes of everyone who is reading this today so they would understand that, if they value anything above You, or if a desire for things rules their life, or if a desire to please people is important to them, or if a desire to be respected by natural kin of any kind is what they want, then they can be an idolator. We ask, in the Name of Jesus, that You would put a deep conviction on everyone who is reading this that we are bond-servants of

the Lord, Jesus Christ. Make them to know that we are not our own, but were bought with a price. Make them to know that we must serve Him, no matter what idols we need to walk away from. We must serve Him. Amen.

Let's go back to where we left off. **(Rev.2:15) *So hast thou also some that hold the teaching of the Nicolaitans in like manner.*** Now remember what we've already learned from the previous chapter about the Nicolaitans. **(Rev.2:6) *But this thou hast, that thou hatest the works of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate. (7) He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith to the churches.*** The Greek word *Nikolaités* which is translated "Nicolaitans," is made up of two words: *nikos* meaning "a conquest, triumph, victory," and *laos* meaning "a people, particularly used of the people of the Lord...the root of the English term 'laity.'" When you put them together, "*Nikolaités* means "to conquer the people." God says He hates this, and the people of the church at Ephesus also hated it. It's a very destructive doctrine that's prevalent in the churches. The Nicolaitans followed the Old Testament, priestly order. They put the priest between you and God, which is false doctrine. We know that we are a "kingdom of priests" (Exodus 19:6; 1 Peter 2:5,9), but we've been called to not follow a priestly order. In these days, we are all priests and we all have a sacrifice to make, the sacrifice of this old flesh.

That priestly order came through Catholicism right on down to the Protestants, who have yet to rebel against it, which is what we all ought to do because of what the Word of God says. No, the Protestants have followed Catholicism and they have put the pastor in the place of the priestly order. The pastor is the undisputed head of the church. The

church revolves around him but, of course, we know that this is totally false doctrine because the Bible says otherwise. **(Eph.4:11) And he gave some [to be] apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; (12) for the perfecting of the saints...** This obviously does not put the pastor as the head of the church. If you were going to put one person over the church, it would have to be the apostle. Catholicism and Protestantism believe there were only 12 apostles, but they're totally mistaken. There are at least 25 apostles listed in the New Testament if you are honest in translating the Greek word, *apóstolos* the same way each time, which they don't do because of their doctrine. [Editor's Note: For example, in Philippians 2:25, Epaphroditus is called an *apóstolos* in the original Greek, yet most Bible versions translate it as "messenger."] They have followed a tradition of Nicolaitanism instead of obeying the Bible. Also notice the Lord gave the five-fold ministry "for the perfecting of the saints." Their one-fold ministry cannot perfect the saints. Any church that is working properly will have a multiplicity of input of the gifts, of the ministries, and so on. This is where we're headed; we're going back to this, folks. The five-fold ministry is what God has chosen. It is a place of safety for God's people.

**(Eph.4:12) For the perfecting of the saints, unto the work of ministering...** These gifts are not for perpetual students. He's raising us up to minister in one form or another. Not everybody can be a preacher or an elder in the church; it's not permitted, in many cases, but, we can all minister. The Greek word translated "minister" is *diakonia* and it just means "serve."

**(Eph.4:12) For the perfecting of the saints, unto**

***the work of ministering, unto the building up of the body of Christ*** (If we all find our place in the body, if we all find how we can serve the people of the body, we are very happy. When we try to emulate men, we become very unhappy and, not only that, but there is no “perfecting of the saints.”): ***(13) till we all attain unto the unity of the faith*** (Praise God! The five-fold ministry is for the “building up of the body” so that we “attain unto the unity of the faith.”), ***and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a fullgrown man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ***. Wow! Is it any wonder, when you have a one-fold ministry, that this is not possible? When everybody else is a spectator, when they just sit there and they’re not learning to serve, they’re not learning to be ministers, does it surprise you that nobody’s growing up under this Nicolaitan error? That’s why God says He hates it so much, and He gives credit to the churches that also hate it. ***(Eph.4:14) That we may be no longer children, tossed to and fro and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men*** (Yes, this is what a Nicolaitan preacher is all about.), ***in craftiness, after the wiles of error***.

There’s another important benefit of the five-fold ministry: ***(Pro.11:14) Where no wise guidance is, the people falleth; But in the multitude of counsellors there is safety***. The true Church is made up of specialists. The pastor is not designed to be able to do what the rest of the five-fold ministry does, although he may usurp it, and the Nicolaitan error is that the pastor usurps the rest of the five-fold ministry. That is not permitted, because “in the multitude of counselors, there is safety.” If one man goes astray, he’s going to take everybody with him, unless

there's a church split where some people disagree with the man and others blindly follow him. The government of the United States was set up to have the safety of many counselors. It wasn't just one man, because if that man goes astray, you could have some monstrosity of a dictator.

### *God's True Leadership*

***(Pro.15:22) Where there is no counsel, purposes are disappointed; But in the multitude of counselors they are established.*** The purposes of God are established in “the perfecting of the saints, unto the work of ministering.” The purposes of the Christian, in growing up and not staying a child the rest of their life, is a purpose that needs to be fulfilled. “Where there is no counsel, purposes are disappointed; But in the multitude of counsellors they are established.” What we need is the “multitude of counselors” in every church. If you don't have this, you don't have a church. Without the five-fold ministry, what you have is a Nicolaitan error. The pastor is not supposed to conquer the laity. It's not the nature of the New Testament church.

***(1Ti.5:17) Let the elders that rule...*** First of all, you have to see here that the elders rule. The elders are not assistants to the pastor. That's the Nicolaitan error. The elders are the five-fold ministry but this escapes a lot of people. ***(1Ti.5:17) Let the elders that rule well be counted worthy of double honor, especially those who labor in the word and in teaching.*** If you ask, “David, how are the elders ‘overseers’? How are they not assistants to the pastor?” Let me show you how they are all ordained people, ordained of God as ministers of God as a five-fold ministry. ***(Act.20:17) And from Miletus he***

(This is apostle Paul.) ***sent to Ephesus, and called to him the elders of the church.*** You say, “My goodness! He passed up the pastor!” Did he? No, because the pastor is an elder, if he’s a real pastor. You can’t be a pastor by going to Bible school and coming out believing the same apostate things that the apostate church believes. That does not make you an elder. An elder is somebody who is older in the Lord, older in God, somebody able to lead other people. It is someone who is merely ordained to that position. So Paul called the elders together. In most churches, they wouldn’t understand that and they would ask, “Why did he skip the pastor?” He didn’t, because the pastor is an elder.

***(Act.20:18) And when they were come to him, he said unto them ... (28) Take heed unto yourselves, and to all the flock, in which the Holy Spirit hath made you bishops*** (“Bishop” is the Greek *episkopos* meaning an “overseer.” The elders are the “bishops,” the “overseers,” the five-fold ministry.), ***to feed the church of the Lord*** (This is the job of the five-fold ministry.) ***which he purchased with his own blood. (29) I know that after my departing grievous wolves shall enter in among you, not sparing the flock.*** Yes, these “wolves” are a bunch of dictators that usurped the authority of the five-fold ministers who were ordained of the Lord Jesus Christ, and they took over the church, usurping every other avenue of God’s wisdom and gifts to the church, “not sparing the flock.” ***(Act.20:30) And from among your own selves shall men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away the disciples after them.*** How is it that pastors, with their Doctor of Divinity degrees, are so ignorant of what the Word of God says, and yet they’ve gone through Bible school? How is it that

they've fallen under the same bondage and into the same deception that, for centuries and centuries, God has hated?

**(Act.20:31) Wherefore watch ye, remembering that by the space of three years I ceased not to admonish every one night and day with tears. (32) And now I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build [you] up (We found out that the five-fold ministry does this.), and to give [you] the inheritance among all them that are sanctified.** This is the job of the five-fold ministry and this is why Paul called the elders to him; it was to explain how they should do this job. **(33) I coveted no man's silver, or gold, or apparel**. That's not true of any of the apostate leaders today, but who is there to stop them? They're the head. Who is there to say, "No, you can't do that"? So here Paul is instructing the five-fold ministry, the elders, the bishops, in the ways of the Kingdom and he gives himself as an example. **(Act.20:34) Ye yourselves know that these hands ministered unto my necessities, and to them that were with me. (35) In all things I gave you an example, that so laboring ye ought to help the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, that he himself said, It is more blessed to give than to receive.**

Notice that there were no women among Jesus' disciples, and also throughout the church, there were no elders who were women. **(1Ti.2:11) Let a woman learn in quietness with all subjection. (12) But I permit not a woman to teach, nor to have dominion over a man...** We have to obey this. Many other Scriptures say this, too (Genesis 3:16; Corinthians 14:34-35; Ephesians 5:22; Titus 2:5; etc.) **(12) But I permit not a woman**

***to teach, nor to have dominion over a man, but to be in quietness. (13) For Adam was first formed, then Eve; (14) and Adam was not beguiled, but the woman being beguiled hath fallen into transgression.*** So a woman can't be a head or a teacher or an overseer or an elder.

Is this still true today? Of course it is. It's still true today that Adam was first formed and then Eve, and Eve was made for Adam, and that the head of the woman is the man, and so forth. This is just God's ordained way, and a woman with a Jezebel spirit (Revelation 2:20) has to deny a lot of Scripture to be self-willed and do what she wants to do. ***(1Ti.2:15) But she shall be saved through her child-bearing, if they continue in faith and love and sanctification with sobriety.*** The main purpose of the woman is to take care of the children and the household and related responsibilities. [Editor's Note: An in-depth study of "The Word, Women and Authority" may be read at <https://ubm1.org/?page=wordwomenauth> without charge.] And why did I pick that out? Well, if you go back to ***(Rev.2:15) So hast thou also some that hold the teaching of the Nicolaitans in like manner. (16) Repent therefore; or else I come to thee quickly, and I will make war against them with the sword of my mouth.*** They had to repent of the Nicolaitan error, and part of this error was unqualified elders, which in this case would be a woman, ruling over the people without the qualified five-fold ministry. If you're sitting under the Nicolaitan error, you must repent of doing it. It is a sin. It is evil and God hates it. Repent.

***(Rev.2:17) He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith to the churches. To him that over-***

**cometh, to him will I give of the hidden manna, and I will give him a white stone...** You ask, "David, what is this white stone?" According to the Old Testament Law, on the Day of Atonement, two goats were presented before the High Priest, and also a pouch with two stones. They were "lots" which were inside the pouch (Leviticus 16:5-34) and one of those stones was a white stone called "the lot of the Lord." The other stone was a black stone called "the lot of the scapegoat." Without looking, the High Priest would choose a stone from the pouch with his right hand and hold the stone over the right-hand goat. If it was the white stone for the lot of the Lord, that goat would be sacrificed, but the other goat would be set free in the wilderness, which symbolized the Lord's sacrifice in our place. We were set free and He was sacrificed. That's the white stone. If it was the black stone for the lot of the scapegoat, that goat would be set free and the other would be sacrificed, which symbolized our escape from judgment. Several centuries before Jesus, there was a good High Priest called Simon "the Righteous," and during the 40 years of his priesthood, the lot of the Lord always came up in his right hand [Editor's Note: See Yoma 39a in the Babylonian Talmud], so the white stone became a sign of an acceptable sacrifice, as it is to us here in this text. The odds against a white stone coming up 40 times in a row are almost two trillion to one. That's far beyond what's considered possible through chance.

**(Rev.2:17) He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith to the churches. To him that overcometh, to him will I give of the hidden manna...** The "hidden manna" is the Spirit of the Word. The letter is what everybody can see; it's not hidden, however, **(2Co.3:6) ... the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth**

**life.** God is able to translate for us the parables of the Old Testament, because that's what they were. The letter was given to the letter Jew and the Spirit was given to the spiritual Jew, who is the New Testament born-again, born-from-above, Jew. The other Jews are natural; they're born from one another, they come from the earth. The born-again Jew that is born from above is spiritual and his inheritance is spiritual. The Old Testament letter is given to him, but ceremonial law must be translated into spirit, as Jesus and Paul and Peter did, because the born-again Jew is a spiritual being. Moral law, of course, is still true. Thou shalt not kill, thou shalt not covet, thou shalt not bear false witness, etc.

### *The New Name*

***(Rev.2:17) He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith to the churches. To him that overcometh, to him will I give of the hidden manna, and I will give him a white stone, and upon the stone a new name written, which no one knoweth but he that receiveth it.*** The "new name" that only the overcomers have and know is the Nature, Character, and Authority of the Father and Jesus (Revelation 3:12,14:1). And also, by the way, every year for forty years, when Simon the High Priest went into the Holy of Holies, a crimson thread on his garment would turn white, which reminds us of what Isaiah spoke. ***(Isa.1:18) Come now, and let us reason together, saith the Lord: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool.*** According to the Babylonian Talmud, the Jews be-

gan to read these signs as God's acceptance of their sacrifice. A "white stone" here represents God's acceptance of your sacrifice, and the fact that the Lord bore your curse and your sin, and you are free.

***(Rev.2:18) And to the angel of the church in Thyatira write: These things saith the Son of God, who hath his eyes like a flame of fire, and his feet are like unto burnished brass: (19) I know thy works, and thy love and faith and ministry and patience, and that thy last works are more than the first.*** Yes, this is the way it is supposed to be. I know many people who started out by getting the beam out of their eye (Matthew 7:3-5; Luke 6:41-42) so they could see clearly to serve the people of God, and they did serve for a while, but then they went back to serving themselves. They gave up their ministry and turned away from the Lord and started doing their own thing again. Their "last works" were not more than their first works. Some people do not believe that God knows our works, but He knows everything we do, and we're going to be judged according to our works, which are all written in His books. Thank God that we have a Blood covering if we're not willfully disobedient! If you're seeking out His Will in the Word of God, seeking to be a disciple, seeking to lose your life in order to gain your life, if you're doing these things, you're not going to fail. You're not going to fall away.

### *The Jezebel Spirit*

***(Rev.2:20) But I have [this] against thee, that thou sufferest the woman Jezebel, who calleth herself a prophetess...*** There is no office of "prophetess" in

the five-fold ministry. There's only the office of "prophet" as part of the five-fold ministry. That's because a "prophet" is an "elder, bishop, overseer," and a woman cannot teach or take authority over the man, as we just saw (1 Timothy 2:12). It is not permitted. Being a prophetess does not make any woman a head of the church, period. You still have to have apostles, prophets, and so forth, the five-fold ministry. So here is a Jezebel, whom we know well from the Old Testament as a woman who ruled over her Ahab husband, to both his destruction and to the destruction of his whole family. All of her children through him, died. They were sentenced to death by the Lord Himself. It's the same with this "Jezebel." She teaches, but her teaching leads the people into sin. She teaches, but we just saw that she's not supposed to be teaching. As we read earlier, **(1Ti.2:11) *Let a woman learn in quietness, with all subjection*** (In other words, "under the authority" of men.). **(12) *But I permit not a woman to teach, nor to have dominion over a man, but to be in quietness.*** And he goes on to say that Adam was the first-formed, and then Eve. She was a help-meet for him. She was to serve him. **(13) *For Adam was first formed, then Eve; (14) and Adam was not beguiled, but the woman being beguiled*** (So Adam was not deceived, but Eve was deceived and that was one reason she shouldn't be a teacher.) ***hath fallen into transgression: (15) but she shall be saved through her child-bearing, if they continue in faith and love and sanctification with sobriety.***

Understand that this Jezebel in Revelation made herself a prophetess; she "callest herself a prophetess." It's possible she was a prophetess before she fell away, because a "prophetess" is just "a woman with a gift of prophecy." It

does not mean she has the office of prophet; there's a difference. There's the gift of prophecy and there is also an office of prophet as one member of the five-fold ministry. The gift of prophecy does not give her, as a woman, authority in the church to teach or take authority over the man. It is not permitted for her to take authority over the man, but that is what Jezebel does, and that is what Jezebel spirits do. They take authority over the man: in the family, in the home, in the church. It's an evil spirit that leads people to destruction, and because the woman is more easily deceived in these things, she leads others astray. That's why it is not permitted for a woman to teach or take authority over the man. This is very important to understand and obey, which is why I'm repeating it.

There are a few more points I'd like to cover here. ***(1Co.14:33) For God is not a God of confusion, but of peace. As in all the churches of the saints*** ("Saints" is the Greek word *hágios* meaning "set apart by {or for} God, holy, sacred" or, in other words, "sanctified ones."), ***(34) let the women keep silence in the churches: for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but let them be in subjection, as also saith the law.*** Notice that it's the New Testament saying this, but that the Law also said this (Genesis 3:16; Esther 1:22). I've had women ask me, "You mean I can't even speak? What about praying?" And I tell them, "Well, praying and prophesying are permitted because you're not praying to men or taking authority over men with your prayers, and when you prophesy, it's not you as a woman speaking, it's the Lord speaking. Though, of course, if you prophesy, that has to be judged by those standing by." You see, there's legal speaking for a woman and there's illegal speaking for a woman. Praying

and prophesying are legal, but teaching, which is a form of taking authority, is not legal.

Can a woman share a prophetic dream or revelation? Certainly. Anything that has to do with prophecy, they can share. It may be a word of knowledge, a dream, a vision, a revelation, all of these are prophetic gifts that can be shared (1 Corinthians 12:4-11). They can share all those things, but teaching they cannot do. They cannot take authority over the man. That's the reason behind the admonition for women to keep silence in the churches. If a woman wants to give a testimony about what the Lord has done, I believe that, as long as it is given underneath the elders, they can permit a testimony for the blessing of the people, because a testimony is a report of what God has done. It is not a teaching.

***(1Co.14:34) Let the women keep silence in the churches: for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but let them be in subjection, as also saith the law. (35) And if they would learn anything, let them ask their own husbands at home...*** That's because the Lord wants the hierarchy of authority, that dictates who is in charge of whom, to be correct within the home, which is that the head of every woman is the man and head of the man is Christ. The Lord doesn't want to go around that. He wants to protect, and maintain respect for, the husband's authority in the household. The husband is the lord of his house and the pastor doesn't take away that authority. He can bring teaching and correction to get things into correct order, but he doesn't take away the husband's authority, and so the Lord wants the woman to ask her husband. The husband, of course, has the responsibility to find out what the Bible says about those things when the

wife asks. **(1Co.14:35) And if they would learn anything, let them ask their own husbands at home: for it is shameful for a woman to speak in the church.** **(36) What? was it from you that the word of God went forth? or came it unto you alone?** In other words, he just got through saying that it was not legal in any of the churches for the woman to speak. **(37) If any man thinketh himself to be a prophet, or spiritual, let him take knowledge of the things which I write unto you, that they are the commandment of the Lord.** This is the commandment of the Lord. Do you think He changed His Mind? Why would He have to change His Mind? Was it wrong to begin with? No, and He's not changing His Mind today. It doesn't matter what you want, it matters what He wants. **(1Co.14:38) But if any man is ignorant, let him be ignorant.**

Here's another example that points out this hierarchy of authority. **(1Co.11:1) Be ye imitators of me, even as I also am of Christ. (2) Now I praise you that ye remember me in all things, and hold fast the traditions, even as I delivered them to you. (3) But I would have you know, that the head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman is the man...**

A wife, sometimes, will go around her husband, but what does the Bible say? **(1Pe.3:1) In like manner, ye wives, be in subjection to your own husbands; that, even if any obey not the word, they may without the word be gained by the behavior of their wives;** **(2) beholding your chaste** (The Greek word there is *hagnos*, also translated as "free from sin, innocent, pure.") **behavior [coupled] with fear.** I understand that there can be trials when a wife is dealing with a husband who is

not obeying the Word but, even then, the wife still needs to submit to his authority, unless it comes to the point where he wants her to go against the Word, too. She should pray for him, of course, until the Lord changes her husband's mind, in hope that he can be won by her chaste behavior. In our society, it's not uncommon for a woman to usurp the authority of the man, but then she dishonors the Lord and her husband, because the Lord has decided that He's going to be the Head of the man, and the man is going to be the head of the woman, as God says plainly. **(1Co.11:3) *But I would have you know, that the head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman is the man; and the head of Christ is God.*** In both the family and the Church, it is this way, and God is not going to change His Mind for anybody (Numbers 23:19; 1 Samuel 15:29).

Now let's go back to where we left off. **(Rev.2:20) *But I have [this] against thee, that thou sufferest the woman Jezebel, who calleth herself a prophetess; and she teacheth and seduceth my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed to idols.*** We've seen what it is to partake of "things sacrificed to idols." An idol is anything more important to you than following and serving the Lord. As for fornication, here is a woman, Jezebel, who is a fornicator in that she is not receiving the seed of the husband. This is spiritual fornication because she is receiving the seed of the devil. The Jezebel spirit is a demon spirit. Somebody who receives a Jezebel spirit is receiving the seed of a very selfish, self-willed, demon spirit that causes a domineering woman to rule over the man, disobeying what the Scripture says.

Maybe you've heard the lying excuse preachers will give about how, "All these things passed away with the apos-

tles and it's different today." No, it was an everlasting Covenant (Isaiah 24:5,53:5). We are not to accept anybody who changes the Covenant. **(Rev.22:18) *I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, if any man shall add unto them, God shall add unto him the plagues which are written in this book: (19) and if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part from the tree of life, and out of the holy city, which are written in this book.*** That's because they have led God's people astray and caused them to disobey His Word. It is very important that we obey His Word. So there is fornication, and Jezebel is teaching people to receive another seed that is not the seed of the Husband, Who is the Lord. The Lord is the Word. We have to obey the Word.

**(Rev.2:21) *And I gave her time that she should repent; and she willeth not to repent of her fornication.*** We know that all of Jezebel's seed were destroyed, and this is a type and shadow for the things to come. The people who follow Jezebel are going to be destroyed. **(22) *Behold, I cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they repent of her works.*** It doesn't sound like they're going to escape this "great tribulation." There are people who are going to go through this tribulation and do very well, but Jezebel and her seed will not. **(23) *And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he that searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto each one of you according to your works.*** There are good works and there are evil works. Jezebel is an evil work and those whom

she trains are evil works. They're going to die in great tribulation, like Jezebel's seed did and Ahab's seed did. It was Ahab who refused to be the head over Jezebel his wife. Instead, he just gave into her and so both of them and all their seed were destroyed (2 Kings 9).

***(Rev.2:24) But to you I say, to the rest that are in Thyatira, as many as have not this teaching, who know not the deep things of Satan (Wow! This is saying that the teachings of Jezebel are “the deep things of Satan.”), as they are wont to say; I cast upon you none other burden. (25) Nevertheless that which ye have, hold fast till I come. (26) And he that overcometh, and he that keepeth my works unto the end (His works wouldn't be the teachings of Jezebel, they wouldn't be the Nicolaitan error, and there wouldn't be Gentiles going back to follow Judaism. This chapter speaks about these, and more.), to him (This is “he that overcometh.”) will I give authority over the nations... In the church, if you have authority, you have to first be an overcomer. There is no true elder who is not an overcomer because he's been given authority. He's not only an authority for the Church, he's an authority against any nation that would hurt the Church. ***(Rev.2:26) And he that overcometh, and he that keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give authority over the nations: (27) and he shall rule them with a rod of iron, as the vessels of the potter are broken to shivers; as I also have received of my Father: (28) and I will give him the morning star.*** Praise the Lord! ***(29) He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith to the churches.*** Notice that in every address to the churches, He makes promises only to the overcomer.***

The overcomer is overcoming all of these temptations to go astray from what is written.

Remember that we read, **(1Pe.4:11) *If any man speaketh, [speaking] as it were oracles of God.*** That means to say what the Bible says, and not say what it doesn't say. That means to not fall into these doctrines that lead people astray and keep them from bearing fruit. Everything that the devil does to the Church is for one purpose. It's to keep them from growing-up and manifesting Sonship, because if that happens, they will be a danger to his kingdom. Everything he does is to make you rest in the flesh and not grow up in God. Jesus, with His sacrifice, did more damage to the devil's kingdom than a world full of lukewarm Christians could ever do. His sacrifice was the one that was acceptable to the Lord. So we have to repent; we have to change our mind; we have to believe what God says.

### *Christians in Name Only*

**(Rev.3:1) *And to the angel of the church in Sardis write: These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars: I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and thou art dead.*** I've always supposed that this name could be "Christian." **(Act.11:25) *And he*** (This is speaking of Barnabus.) ***went forth to Tarsus to seek for Saul; (26) and when he had found him, he brought him unto Antioch. And it came to pass, that even for a whole year they were gathered together with the church, and taught much people, and that the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch.***  
The lost people called the disciples "Christians" because

they followed in the Steps of Jesus. They spoke His Word, they had His Power, they did His Works. It's sad that many people have taken the name of "Christian" but they haven't taken on His Name. His "Name," of course, is His "nature, character, and authority." When we baptize people, we baptize them into the Name of the Lord, Jesus Christ. We baptize them into the Body of Christ, into Jesus, and it is the same Name, the same Nature, Character, and Authority, as the Father and the Holy Spirit, because they are One. His Name is the very Nature of Jesus, Himself, the very Nature that His apostles, after Him, inherited. His Nature, Character, and Authority is what we should be walking in.

***(Rev.3:1) And to the angel of the church in Sardis write: These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars: I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and thou art dead.*** Until we come into the Name, we are "dead" and of no use to ourselves or anyone else. Coming into the Name is, first of all, coming into the revelation of what it represents, which is the Word of God. The Word of God teaches us how to enter into the Nature, Character, and Authority of Jesus Christ. Without the Word, we can't do this. Everyone needs to constantly crucify the old man in order to grow in the Word, in order to come into the revelation of the Name. ***(Gal.2:20) I have been crucified with Christ; and it is no longer I that live, but Christ living in me: and that [life] which I now live in the flesh I live in faith, [the faith] which is in the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself up for me.*** When you're baptized and go down in the water, you accept by faith that you have died and are buried with Him in the likeness of His death. Why is it water?

The water represents “the washing of water with the Word” (Ephesians 5:26) and the Word puts to death our old man. ***(Eph.4:20) But ye did not so learn Christ; (21) if so be that ye heard him, and were taught in him, even as truth is in Jesus: (22) that ye put away, as concerning your former manner of life, the old man, that waxeth corrupt after the lusts of deceit; (23) and that ye be renewed in the spirit of your mind, (24) and put on the new man, that after God hath been created in righteousness and holiness of truth.*** So when you go down into the water, you accept by faith that your old man died, and that the One Who comes up is Jesus Christ. You’ve been baptized into His Name and you are now a member of His Body.

Obviously, it takes the true Word to put to death the old man, the old life. If, like Jezebel, because of selfish ambition, you don’t want to believe the true Word of God, you will twist it and tweak it and pervert it, but that “water” won’t put to death your old life. You will not inherit the Name, the Nature, Character, and Authority of Jesus. If, like Judaizers, you don’t want to believe the true Word and you go back under the Law, you will not inherit the Name, the Nature, Character, and Authority of Jesus. If, like Balaam, you don’t want to believe the true Word and you go astray after the things of the world, you will not inherit the Name, the Nature, Character, and Authority of Jesus. And if, like the Nicolaitans, you teach or submit to false doctrines for whatever reason, you will not manifest the Name, because it’s not the Water. It’s not the true Word that puts to death the old man and brings to life the new man (Romans Chapter 6). If you change the Word, even just a little bit, it’s never going to put to death the old man, the old life,

the old self-will. We must humble ourselves to the Word of God. If we do that, God will give us grace. If we don't, we get no grace, we get no power from God. And, therefore, we get no death, so we get no resurrection. If you don't get a death, you don't get a resurrection. You have to die in order to live. That's what Jesus said (Matthew 10:39; Mark 8:35; Luke 9:24; John 12:25). If you don't lose your life, you won't gain your life.

The reason we're here is to bear fruit. Remember that we began this study looking at the Parable of the Sower, and how it showed that three out of every four people who hear the Word, don't bear fruit and so they fall away. If you're side-tracked by Nicolaitan errors or by Jezebel spirits or by any of the other things we've been speaking about, you're not going to bear fruit. You could stay trapped there for the rest of your life because it's so much harder to go back and get these errors out than it is to get it right the first time. You have to overcome your flesh in order to bear fruit, and this is why I've said, many times, that when people become Christians, they need to start reading in the New Testament and read and read and read to renew their minds with the Word of God. That's the only way to know the truth for yourself. We've been told to each work out our own salvation with fear and trembling (Philippians 2:12). You can't trust in man at all, not friends, not even preachers, because it's too easy to get hung up in a dead church for 40 or 50 years and never bear fruit and never partake of the great benefits of the Kingdom (Psalm 103:2-18).

I know God ordained it that way, but I started reading the Word of God only because my Baptist friend challenged me to do it. I didn't have any knowledge of the Word of God because I was raised in Catholicism and they don't teach you

the Word of God. Well, that turned out to be a good thing. As I was reading the Bible day and night, since I didn't have anybody to tell me otherwise, I just believed what I was reading and it was changing my mind and it was changing my life. I learned that the Holy Spirit Himself can teach you. He taught me not to add-to, or take-away-from, the Word. These are principles I learned before I ever went to a church and by the time I did go to a church, I already had the Word in my heart, so I didn't stick anywhere very long because I realized that these people had gone astray with religion. God will bring to your remembrance everything He has said to you through His Word (John 14:26) in order to defend you against all of these people, who are ready to take advantage of you, and plunder you, and entice you on to some side-road. The side-roads are always broad roads where you have lots of freedom in the flesh. The narrow road always continues to get narrower and narrower until you end up walking in the Steps of Jesus.

Of course, we have to "repent," which is to "change your mind," every time we pick up the Word of God and we see what it says. The Lord taught me that, ***(Psa.119:160) The sum of thy word is truth; And every one of thy righteous ordinances [endureth] for ever.*** And, ***(Isa.28:10) For it is precept upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, there a little.*** It's a little here and a little there, but when it's all added up, you don't have to reject any of it because it all fits together. If you'll do this, you'll learn quickly enough whether or not you're in a Nicolaitan church, a church which is ***(2Ti.3:5) holding a form of godliness, but having denied the power thereof. From these also turn away.*** Leave; just leave. The power is

manifested through the specialists of the five-fold ministry. It's not going to be manifested through a Jezebel; that's not permitted in the Scriptures anywhere.

Once you find out what the Church is supposed to look like, you're a lot less likely to get hung-up in some error and fall away. The "harlot" is a parable of not just a particular religion, but all religion that is apostate, fallen-away, and receiving the seed that is not of the Husband, Christ. The harlot is there, ready to gobble you up. They're ready to bring you in and point out to you Scriptures that they've taken out of context or twisted (Psalm 56:5; 2 Peter 3:16). They'll use the Word to cajole or condemn you into obeying them, and as soon as they take advantage of your flesh, they've put you in their trap. So repent and follow the Lord. Find out what the Church looks like before you go to a church and find yourself hung-up there for the rest of your life. It's a desperate situation to be in.

It's very important to seek out your own salvation with fear and trembling (Philippians 2:12). Don't trust in any man. You already have the greatest teachers in the whole wide world teaching you when you read the Bible. I once had someone, who was kind of impressed with my knowledge and understanding of the Word, suggest to me, "David, why don't you go to our Bible school?" I told them, "Well, if I went to your Bible school, I might get the best that your denomination has to offer, but I can go to my Bible and get the best that the whole world has to offer. I get the original teachers, those who spoke the incorruptible Word of God by divine inspiration. Why would I go and sit under men who would tell me things that I would have to get rid of later, because when I read the Word of God, I find out that what they told me is contrary? Or because my pride would

not let me humble myself to the Word after this religion has taken my spirit over?" We have to repent.

If you don't know what the Word of God says, then you need to be reading it day and night. You don't need to be like all those people who go to some religious organization where they sit on a pew and listen to just one or two verses, then go on their way until the next time they come together and get another couple of verses. This is not enough to put to death your old man. You need to read and humble yourself to the Word of God, until that baptism of the washing of the water with the Word puts to death the old man and brings to life the new man. This is the most important thing about the crucified life. The old man dies when we repent. As you read the Word and repent, he dies and the new man comes to life. This must be done. If it's not done, you will get trapped and you will not bear fruit. The devil is a great deceiver; he emulates Christianity without doing it. He has deceived people into thinking that the denominations are Christianity, but anybody who can read the New Testament knows, if they read it with an unprejudiced mind, that this is not true.

It's not true and neither was it true in Jesus' day. He came to the denominations of Judaism and none of them chose Him. Only those people who came out of those denominations chose Him. They were His Church, His "called-out" ones, and today, we are called out of the apostate denominations of Christianity, just as they were called out of the apostate denominations of Judaism. History always repeats. The things that have been are the things which shall be (Ecclesiastes 1:9). We are called out from among them to be separate. **(2Co.6:16) And what agreement hath a temple of God with idols? for we are a temple of**

***the living God; even as God said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. (17) Wherefore Come ye out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, And touch no unclean thing; And I will receive you, (18) And will be to you a Father, And ye shall be to me sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.*** We are called to walk as He walked (1John 2:6). We're called to be overcomers. With most doctrines in the denominations, you don't have to overcome anything, but that's not what the promises to the churches say. That's why you need to read and find these things out. So He said to the church in Sardis, "You have a name that lives, but you're dead," and that's true of an awful lot of people who call themselves "Christian."

***(Rev.3:2) Be thou watchful, and establish the things that remain, which were ready to die...*** Yes, anything that you have that is of God, that is of the Word of God, that is a matter of discipleship in which you follow the Word of God, you don't want to give up, but everything else has to go. The heart of man is deceitfully wicked (Jeremiah 17:9). It's very easy for us to be deceived. That's why God sent us His Word, and proved to us that it was His Word by putting a numeric pattern in there. That numeric pattern is God's "signature." ***(Rev.3:2) Be thou watchful, and establish the things that remain, which were ready to die: for I have found no works of thine perfected before my God.*** He's obviously saying that it's a normal thing for our works to be perfected before God, but how can that be, except we have a renewed mind? ***(Rom.12:2) And be not fashioned according to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of***

***your mind, and ye may prove what is the good and acceptable and perfect will of God.*** How can our works be perfected if we don't have this renewed mind, and don't repent and follow the Lord? How can it be? It just can't happen. Without a renewed mind, we don't know what the truth is.

***(Rev.3:3) Remember therefore how thou hast received and didst hear; and keep it, and repent.***

What the denominations do is train us to ignore Scriptures that disagree with their pet doctrines. They give us reasons of why we need to overlook this or that or the other, and one of their favorite reasons is, "This all passed away with the apostles." Well, they can't give any proof of that, whatsoever, because we've seen that the Bible says the exact opposite. The Bible says that it was "an everlasting Covenant" from the time it was made (Isaiah 24:5,53:5), and that we can't add to it or take away from it without falling under a curse (Revelation 22:18-19). Of course, they haven't read enough of the Word to find that out, or to believe it. We have to believe it. We have to repent and believe the first Words, to obey what the Word of God says.

***(Rev.3:3) Remember therefore how thou hast received and didst hear; and keep it, and repent. If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee.***

You never know when your time will be up and, therefore, you need to live every day like it's your last. We have to serve every Word of God that we see. I feel sorry for the people who either don't read the Word, or gave up reading the Word because they found no ability to obey, but attributed it to God instead of their own pride and arrogance.

### *The Spotted Garment*

***(Rev.3:4) But thou hast a few names in Sardis that did not defile their garments...*** What is this talking about? What are these “garments”? ***(Jud.1:22) And on some have mercy, who are in doubt; (23) and some save, snatching them out of the fire; and on some have mercy with fear; hating even the garment spotted by the flesh.*** This is talking about the works of the flesh. There are many people walking with “defiled garments.” Everything they do is defiled, and therefore, everything they reap is defiled. ***(Gal.6:7) Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. (8) For he that soweth unto his own flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth unto the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap eternal life.*** You do what you are. When your “garment” is defiled, what you do is defiled and you’re going to reap the same, but God came so that you might sow a good seed and reap a good harvest. Our “actions” are what we “sow” and the Word of God is there to restrict our actions so that we can receive a good harvest. And since our “garments” represent our works, what should we be clothing ourselves with? ***(Rom.13:14) But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to [fulfil] the lusts [thereof].***

### *The Shining Garment*

Let’s look at what the Bible has to say about how the Bride is dressed. ***(Rev.19:8) And it was given unto her*** (This is the Bride.) ***that she should array herself***

***in fine linen, bright*** (That's the Greek word *lampros* and it's also translated as "shining, magnificent, gorgeous, splendid.") ***[and] pure: for the fine linen is the righteous acts of the saints.*** The Bride is radiant and glorious, but what about those who are invited to the marriage feast? What are they wearing? ***(Rev.19:14) And the armies which are in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white*** (That's the Greek word *leukos* meaning "white, bright, brilliant.") ***[and] pure.*** Those who are invited to the marriage feast will have the glory that comes with purity, but they will not have the magnificent radiance that is shining forth from the Bride. If you want to be in the Bride, you don't want your "garment" defiled because the Bride has a spotless and blemishless garment (Daniel 12:10; Psalm 18:23; Philippians 2:15; 1 Timothy 6:14; 2 Peter 3:14; Jude 1:24). Everything She knows about the Word, She is being obedient to, because She is walking by faith in the Lord and the Lord is working in Her to will and to do of His good pleasure (Philippians 2:13). And He goes on to say, ***(Rev.3:4) But thou hast a few names in Sardis that did not defile their garments: and they shall walk with me in white; for they are worthy.*** Well, now we know that that is about one quarter of the people that receive the Gospel.

***(Rev.3:5) He that overcometh shall thus be arrayed in white garments; and I will in no wise blot his name out of the book of life...*** When you're born-again, you're written in the Book. If you don't overcome, you're erased out of the Book. The only people who are not erased out of the Book are the people that overcome. In other words, overcomers know what the right is and they know what the wrong is, and they're going to do the right.

The promise of not being blotted out is only to overcomers. ***(Rev.3:5) He that overcometh shall thus be arrayed in white garments; and I will in no wise blot his name out of the book of life, and I will confess his name before my Father,*** (He is the High Priest of our confession {Hebrews 3:1}.), ***and before his angels.*** The angels administer salvation to those who inherit it (Hebrews 1:14). They are the ministers of God's salvation to us and through us. ***(Rev.3:6) He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith to the churches.***

***(Rev.3:7) And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia...*** This is the church of brotherly love. "Philadelphia" is formed from two Greek words, *philos* meaning "affectionate friend" and *adelphós* meaning "brother, brotherly," i.e., "loving one's brother." It's interesting that Philadelphia was later renamed Allahshir by king Attalus II, and Allahshir means "The White City." This one church here, the Philadelphia church, is the greatest of all the churches. Just as Moses, as a type and shadow of the Man-child, married one of seven daughters (Exodus 2:16,21), the church in this city, Philadelphia, the church of brotherly love, represents the Bride. The test, of course, is to see how much you love: how much you love the Lord by keeping His commandments, and how much you love the brethren because you love the Lord. These are the ones who will be chosen.

***(Rev.3:7) And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write: These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath the key of David*** (David was the ruler in Jerusalem, which was the Bride {Revelation 21:2,10}.), ***he that openeth and none shall shut, and that shutteth and none openeth.*** What you bind on earth is bound in heaven (Matthew 16:19,18:18). This

authority was given to the people of God, but most of them don't have the faith to exercise it, because they don't have the knowledge of the Word that brings about the faith. **(Rom.10:17) So belief cometh of hearing, and hearing by the word of Christ.**

**(Rev.3:8) I know thy works (behold, I have set before thee a door opened, which none can shut)...** Praise the Lord! This is an opening for the work of the Lord to go forth. The Philadelphia church in these days is going to bring resurrection life to the rest of the church, just as Jesus, Who was the Man-child, did. He was the Head of the Bride. John the Baptist told his disciples, **(Joh.3:29) He that hath the Bride is the Bridegroom: but the friend of the bridegroom, that standeth and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly because of the bridegroom's voice: this my joy therefore is made full.** Jesus raised up those disciples to go forth and raise up the five-fold ministry. Once again, this is going to happen. The disciples of our day are going to go forth and raise up the five-fold ministry which "none can shut." **(Rev.3:8) I know thy works (behold, I have set before thee a door opened, which none can shut), that thou hast a little power, and didst keep my word, and didst not deny my name.** It's easy to deny the Name of the Lord; it's not just Judas and Peter who denied the Lord. There are a lot of people who deny the Lord because every time you read the Word of God, Who is Jesus Christ, and you deny it, you're denying the Lord. If you will not subject yourself to the Word, you're denying the Lord.

**(Rev.3:9) Behold, I give of the synagogue of Satan, of them that say they are Jews, and they are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come**

***and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee.*** This speaks of how those natural Jews who will not be born again and become a member of the church, a member of the body of Christ, will be subservient to the Philadelphia church, which He loves. ***(10) Because thou didst keep the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of trial, that hour which is to come upon the whole world, to try them that dwell upon the earth.*** In Revelation 17:12, God speaks about that hour when the beast makes war on the saints, which is not about “flying away”; it’s about overcoming so that there is no trial for you. Remember how Moses went through his own wilderness, and that experience prepared him to bring God’s people through the wilderness. It was not so much Moses being tried as it was God’s people being tried. His trial was them. Their trial was the wilderness. Moses had been in the wilderness and he had overcome, or else God would not have used him to bring God’s people there. It was their turn to overcome the wilderness; they had to overcome the fact that they couldn’t do things the way they’d always done things. They had to have faith in God, just as Moses had faith in God.

***(Rev.3:11) I come quickly: hold fast that which thou hast, that no one take thy crown.*** Notice that they had the crown; they weren’t seeking for the crown. In other places, we see that they were promised the crown “if,” because they had to meet a condition, but these people had the crown. They were the “Crown City.” These were the people of God, spotless and blemishless, walking in all the knowledge that they had. ***(12) He that overcometh, I will make him a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go out thence no more: and I***

***will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, the new Jerusalem...***

This is the Bride. They have the Name of their God, the Nature, Character, and Authority of their God, which makes them the Bride, which makes them the one of the seven. It makes them the “Esther” who went into the King’s house, but all the rest of the women went back to the house of the women. They were culled and Esther became the Bride, and that’s what we’re talking about here. We’re not the old Jerusalem, not the one that’s in bondage with her children that Paul spoke about, the one that’s a handmaid and not the freewoman (Galatians 4:22-31). We are born from the new Jerusalem, which is from above, and this new Jerusalem, according to John is coming down out of heaven (Revelation 21:2), and here we see the same thing. It’s not something that’s going to happen in the future, it’s something that is happening because you’re either being born of this city, the Bride, or you’re being born of the rest of Israel.

### *The City from Above*

***(12) He that overcometh, I will make him a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go out thence no more: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, the new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God...*** Notice it says “cometh,” which is present tense. We are being born from above. This city is coming down as you’re born of the Bride, as you’re born of the heavenly city. Paul spoke about coming to the Heavenly City, the New Jerusalem (Hebrews 12:18-29). ***(Heb.12:18) For ye are not come unto [a mount]***

***that might be touched ... (22) but ye are come unto mount Zion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to innumerable hosts of angels, (23) to the general assembly and church of the firstborn who are enrolled in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect.*** This is not “a mount that might be touched,” but the apostate church erroneously teaches that this is a physical city which is coming down out of heaven at the end of the tribulation, and some push it even further back than that. ***(12) He that overcometh, I will make him a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go out thence no more: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, the new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God, and mine own new name. (13) He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith to the churches.*** Oh, thank You, Father!

This is a great prize. Paul said, ***(Php.3:12) Not that I have already obtained, or am already made perfect: but I press on, if so be that I may lay hold on that for which also I was laid hold on by Christ Jesus. (13) Brethren, I could not myself yet to have laid hold: but one thing I do, forgetting the things which are behind, and stretching forward to the things which are before, (14) I press on toward the goal unto the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.*** And this will be your prize if you are willing to give up your life in this world to follow after Jesus, as those early disciples did. They gave up their living and anything else that stood in the way of them serving Jesus. They gave it up, and so it is today. Your most important employer

is the Lord Himself. Wherever you are, you're supposed to be representing Him. People will be changed by your witness, by your testimony, by the fact that the Lord, through the Bride, lives in you. People will be changed by that.

New Jerusalem, Zion, represents the capitol city, and there are many places where the Bible says to us, "Let's go up to Zion." For example, **(Isa.2:3) *And many peoples shall go and say, Come ye, and let us go up to the mountain of the Lord, to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths: for out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem.*** Also, **(Mic.4:2) *And many nations shall go and say, Come ye, and let us go up to the mountain of the Lord, and to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths. For out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem.*** Zion is a place of holiness. It's a high calling of God. It's the place of the Presence of God. Zion is the new leadership that is coming for God's people.

Father, we thank You so much, Lord. We ask, Lord, that all the brethren who are reading this study have been helped to discern what it is that causes a falling-away, helped to discern the traps that have been laid. Lord, we pray that You have mercy upon Your people and deliver them through Your wisdom, Your authority, O Lord. Thank You so much, Father, for drawing us unto Yourself. Thank You for granting us repentance unto life. Thank You, Father, that You have put in us a desire to serve You as disciples, a desire to take up our cross and follow You, to deny ourselves, to lose our self-life, to mature in the life of Christ, the resurrected

One. Lord, put this desire in Your people.

Lord, we know that we are coming to days that are going to restore the fear of the Lord in the “church,” which is not the Church. Lord, this will be awesome and wondrous when Your people get their eyes open to their Nicolaitan denominations, and come out from among them, and are ready to follow the anointed leadership that You’re sending at this time. Great revival is about to go forth and multitudes are going to be swept into the Kingdom, even people who already thought they were in the Kingdom but were just in religion. So, Lord, we thank You that you have a giant of the body of Christ that is about to stand up in this world and do the works of Jesus Christ! That’s awesome, Lord! We’re so looking forward to it, Lord. We know it’s the anointing that breaks the yoke, and that many are in bondage, but that You will set the captives free so that they may go and bring this glorious Gospel to the whole world. Lord, we’re so looking forward to this miracle.

Lord, help us to search the Scriptures. Help us to have wisdom and discernment as to what are the pitfalls, what are the things that cause the falling-away, what it means to have “idols” today. Most people think, “We don’t have any problem with idolatry today,” but it’s a major problem, so, Lord, help Your people to see what is “idolatry.” You demand to be First. You demand to be Only. Lord, we just ask You in Jesus’ Name, that we may be Your disciples, that You will give us grace to serve You in everything. Thank You so much, Father. In Jesus’ Name.

## CHAPTER EIGHT

### *Great Conflict and Sufferings*

Father, we praise You and thank You for being in our midst and blessing us, giving us wisdom and discernment concerning the falling away. We thank You, Lord, that we have been delivered out of the power of darkness, and we have faith in the Son Who set us free. We put our trust in You, Lord. Give us wisdom today, in Jesus' Name, amen.

I'm going to start this final chapter on how to escape the falling away, by pointing out what the Bible says is the normal Christian life. (**Heb.10:32**) ***But call to remembrance the former days, in which, after ye were enlightened, ye endured a great conflict of sufferings...*** This is confusing to some people because they've heard the "prosperity gospel," and so they don't think you're supposed to go through any suffering, but we've seen that suffering the loss of your old life in order to have your new life is just a fulfillment of our baptism. It's a necessity. If you don't lose your life, you don't gain your life, as Jesus said at least six times (Matthew 10:39,16:25; Mark 8:35; Luke 9:24,17:33). (**Joh.12:25**) ***He that loveth his life*** (This is the Greek word *psuché* and it means "soul {psyche}; a person's distinct identity {unique personhood}, i.e. individual personality.") ***loseth it; and he that hateth his life*** (That's *psuché* again.) ***in this world shall keep it unto life*** (This is the Greek *zóé*, the spiritual life. *Strong's* says, "The Lord intimately shares His gift of life with people, creating each in His image which gives all the capacity to know His eternal life.") ***eternal***. He's talking about losing the lower, carnal life for the higher, spiritual

life. The carnal life or the spiritual life: It's a conflict, and it's one that everybody goes through.

***(Heb.10:32) But call to remembrance the former days, in which, after ye were enlightened, ye endured a great conflict of sufferings; (33) partly, being made a gazingstock both by reproaches and afflictions...*** That's very true. When you turn to Christ, you have a new spirit and that new spirit is contrary to the world's spirit (John 8:23,17:14,16; John 18:36; John 15:19; etc.) They know you're different and they don't feel comfortable around people who are different, so they persecute you. ***(33) Partly, being made a gazingstock both by reproaches and afflictions and partly, becoming partakers with them that were so used.*** Of course, we need to suffer with God's people. Whatever it costs, we need to stand beside them. ***(34) For ye both had compassion on them that were in bonds, and took joyfully the spoiling of your possessions...*** Sometimes you will be plundered, but don't be concerned because the Bible says, ***(Php.4:19) And my God shall supply every need of yours according to his riches in glory in Christ Jesus.*** No matter what they steal from you, it makes no difference. They may be stealing just your ego or they may be stealing your money; it's all part of the crucifixion. We need to take it joyfully because not everybody has this awesome gift that's been given to us from God, and we should praise Him for it. Whatever we go through in this dinky, short little life in order to be in that life is worth it. We are privileged, and we should be thankful to God, every moment.

***(Heb.10:34) For ye both had compassion on them that were in bonds, and took joyfully the***

**spoiling of your possessions, knowing that ye have for yourselves a better possession and an abiding one.** (Yes, an eternal one.) **(35) Cast not away therefore your boldness, which hath great recompense of reward.** The devil wants to take away our boldness.

He'll put condemnation on you, he'll put fear on you, he'll do anything to take away your boldness in your faith because there's nothing he can do with that. So don't cast it away. Don't get angry at God. Don't get angry at anybody else. Endure the trial of your faith, patiently. **(36) For ye have need of patience, that, having done the will of God, ye may receive the promise.** Yes, indeed. We must endure in faith to the end. Those are the ones Jesus said would be saved (Matthew 10:22,24:13; Mark 13:13).

**(37) For yet a very little while, He that cometh shall come, and shall not tarry.** This is talking about the coming of the Lord in your life, not just in the air. He is coming in your life. Be patient, endure the trials, keep your eye on the goal. **(2Co.3:18) But we all, with unveiled face beholding as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, are transformed into the same image from glory to glory, even as from the Lord the Spirit.** Behold in the mirror the glory of the Lord and claim it as yours.

**(Heb.10:38) But my righteous one shall live by faith: And if he shrink back, my soul hath no pleasure in him.** What we're proving through our trials is who are the true believers. Those that were His from the foundation of the world will be manifested, and they will endure the trial joyfully, because of what's being given to them. **(39) But we are not of them that shrink back unto perdition; but of them that have faith unto the saving of the soul.** The "saving of the soul" is

Him coming in you, it's **(Col.1:27) ... Christ in you, the hope of glory.** If you want to see what "salvation" is, look at Jesus. That is what "saved" is. He is coming in you, first in spirit, then in soul, and then, if you endure in your faith, in body.

**(2Cor.13:5) Try your own selves, whether ye are in the faith; prove your own selves...** How do we apply the faith that's been given unto us? First of all, you must stay in the Scriptures to renew your mind, because you will be transformed by the renewing of your mind (Romans 12:2). The Word is what gives you faith. **(Rom.10:17) So belief [cometh] of hearing, and hearing by the word of Christ.** And as we are having our minds renewed by the Word, the next question is, "Are you applying the faith that the Lord gave you to the situations in your life (Ephesians 6:17; Hebrews 4:12)?" We study the Scriptures to see how people applied the promises of the Word. **(2Co.1:20) For how many soever be the promises of God, in him is the yea: wherefore also through him is the Amen, unto the glory of God through us.** Christians don't understand they have so much authority in God that it's hardly been tapped. Jesus said, **(Mar.11:24) ... All things whatsoever ye pray and ask for, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them.** Are you walking by faith to receive everything that God has provided for you? Do it. Study the Word. Don't be an idolater: Don't let anything get in your way; don't let anything be more important.

**(2Co.13:5) Try your own selves, whether ye are in the faith; prove your own selves. Or know ye not as to your own selves, that Jesus Christ is in you? unless indeed ye be reprobate.** You do have what you

need; you've been given the Spirit of Christ so that you can have the Soul of Christ: the Mind, the Will, and the Emotions of Christ. This power of the Spirit of Christ is there, especially if you've been baptized in the Holy Spirit, as they were in the book of Acts. The power is there; believe it. Look in the mirror and see Jesus. Remember, you're not living anymore; Jesus lives in you. ***(Gal.2:20) I have been crucified with Christ; and it is no longer I that live, but Christ living in me: and that [life] which I now live in the flesh I live in faith, [the faith] which is in the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself up for me.*** That's the good confession that came out of Paul's mouth, and when you confess that, you have power. Don't let the devil talk you into his power, because he has none if you exercise yours. We don't want to be *adokimos*, we don't want to be "reprobate, rejected, unapproved; by implication, 'worthless.'"

***(1Co.10:1) For I would not, brethren, have you ignorant, that our fathers were all under the cloud, and all passed through the sea*** (Here Paul is explaining that this is a parable, and applying the parable to us. He's saying it's the same thing, so then he can make his point:); ***(2) and were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea...*** The "cloud" represents the Holy Spirit baptism. The "sea" represents the water of baptism. The old man goes down into that water and the new man is the one who comes up. Some of you have been baptized in the "sea" but not in the "cloud"; you haven't been baptized in the Holy Spirit. You need to seek God for that. You need to seek Him, first and foremost, for that above all things, and believe you have received.

***(1Co.10:2) And were all baptized unto Moses***

***in the cloud and in the sea; (3) and did all eat the same spiritual food; (4) and did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of a spiritual rock that followed them: and the rock was Christ.*** Are you “drinking” of Christ? Are you “drinking” of the Word? He was the Word made flesh (John 1:14). Are you partaking of His Life? He made reconciliation (Romans 5:10-11; 2 Corinthians 5:18; Ephesians 2:16). He gave His Life for yours; His Life is yours now. Keep confessing it, keep thanking God for it, keep applying it. You have authority, you are not helpless anymore. You can do all things through Christ. ***(Php.4:13) I can do all things in him that strengthen me.***

***(1Co.10:5) Howbeit with most of them God was not well pleased*** (I have to say that it’s the same situation today. He’s trying to show you this parable is a repetition of history.): ***for they were overthrown in the wilderness.*** As we’ve already learned from the Parable of the Sower, three out of four are overthrown, so we’re looking at the principles that will keep us from being among those three out of four who fall away. ***(6) Now these things were our examples, to the intent we should not lust after evil things, as they also lusted.*** Yes, they got sidetracked. They were the chosen people and they had all those wonderful promises (Genesis 12:3; Numbers 24:9; Deuteronomy 28:1-14; etc.), but they didn’t appreciate it. They got their eyes on the problems (Numbers 13:28,14:1 etc.) instead of on the promises, and they fell away. ***(1Co.10:7) Neither be ye idolaters, as were some of them; as it is written, The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play.*** The Greek word there for play is *paizó* and it means “to play

like a child; to sport (includes singing and dancing), jest; to give way to hilarity.” Yes, you can sit down and you can “eat and drink” of the Life and the Water of the Lord, which is the Word, and then go right back to “playing” at being a Christian. You can go right back, not realizing that you’re being called to be a disciple, not realizing that you’re being called to lose your life and follow Him.

**(1Co.10:8) Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in one day three and twenty thousand.** There are a lot of fornicators out there among God’s people and they think they can get away with it, but no, it says they “fell,” and so shall you unless you repent. Don’t justify your sin to yourself. Don’t do as one man did, who called me and tried to use the love of God to justify his sin. He was leaning on verses such as **(Psa.52:1) ... The lovingkindness of God endureth continually.** Even when I pointed out what the Bible says about the election and predestination (Matthew 22:14; 2 Peter 1:3-9,3:14; etc.), he kept saying, “No, this is a loving God.” People like that create a Jesus that lets them continue in their sin, but they don’t know what love is. God is not Love if He permits fornication in His Kingdom, or He permits it among His people to pollute His people (Psalm 11:5,92:9; Jeremiah12:3; Luke 13:27; etc.) If the Bible says something is sin, it’s sin; admit it, confess it, and God in His Love will deliver you.

**(1Co.10:9) Neither let us make trial of the Lord, as some of them made trial, and perished by the serpents. (10) Neither murmur ye, as some of them murmured, and perished by the destroyer.** Murmurers are complainers. Murmurers are whiners. Murmurers don’t remember the special, wonderful thing that

God has chosen them for, though as we've seen, they must endure a trial of their faith in order to receive the promise. Murmuring is not enduring the trial of your faith. Murmuring is what you do because you're looking at the things that are, instead of calling **(Rom.4:17) ... the things that are not, as though they were.** Murmuring will keep you from walking by faith and joyfully taking the suffering as a necessity to destroy the old life and bring about the new life. **(1Co.10:11) Now these things happened unto them by way of example** (That's the Greek word *tupos* meaning "type, prefiguring something or somebody"; "a parable."); **and they were written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the ages are come.** So all of can know those failures that they went through in their wilderness were to exhort us not to walk in their steps.

**(1Co.10:12) Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall.** That's the falling-away. If you think you've arrived and you can relax in the flesh, forget it. You go from victory to victory, from glory to glory, but you have to fight the battle to do that. Many people are just resting in the flesh. **(13) There hath no temptation taken you but such as man can bear...** That is so true. I've given this example of my dad before. My dad smoked for about 45 years, I guess. At the time, he didn't know the Lord, but a doctor told him, "Mr. Eells, if you keep on smoking, you're going to die." You know what he did? He quit. Now, if he can quit, you can quit. If anybody has ever been motivated in any way to quit any sin, you can do it, too, because you have Jesus.

**(1Co.10:13) There hath no temptation taken you but such as man can bear: but God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are**

**able** (You may give in because you're tired of hearing the devil whisper in your ear, but then it's your choice to do that, because God says that you are able to overcome.); ***but will with the temptation make also the way of escape...*** So what is "the way of escape" when you're being tempted? You remember your baptism, you remember you don't live anymore, you remember that you can tell the devil, "No, I can't be tempted with that because that was crucified on the Cross and I'm saved, I'm delivered, and I'm healed," and on and on. You remember that you already have the promises and you stand on them by faith. ***(1Ti.6:12) Fight the good fight of the faith, lay hold on the life eternal, whereunto thou wast called, and didst confess the good confession in the sight of many witnesses.*** "Fight the good fight of the faith" and He will make a way of escape. ***(1Co.10:13) There hath no temptation taken you but such as man can bear: but God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation make also the way of escape, that ye may be able to endure it. (14) Wherefore, my beloved, flee from idolatry.***

***(2Pe.3:14) Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for these things, give diligence that ye may be found in peace, without spot and blameless in his sight.*** He wouldn't have said this unless He knew you could do it because of what He did at the Cross. There are many liars out there who will tell you that you can't do it only because they couldn't do it, not because it can't be done, but we believe what the Lord is saying. ***(2Pe.3:15) And account that the longsuffering of our Lord is salvation*** (Yes, He is being long-suffering with you and

me in order that we come to that point.); ***even as our beloved brother Paul also, according to the wisdom given to him, wrote unto you; (16) as also in all [his] epistles, speaking in them of these things; wherein are some things hard to be understood, which the ignorant and unstedfast wrest...*** That is the Greek word *strebloó* and it means “to twist, causing torture; i.e. to twist or dislocate (like limbs on a torture rack)”; (figuratively) to twist (pervert) language.” Now why did they “wrest,” why did they “twist” the Word of God? These people will always twist the Word of God because they want to continue in their sins, so God lets them do it.

If you’re going to be honest, you’ll apply the Word of God (***Isa.28:10***) ... ***precept upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, there a little.*** And you’re not going to leave anything out if you believe, (***Psa.119:160***) ***The sum of thy word is truth; And every one of thy righteous ordinances endureth for ever.*** Then you’re going to be victorious when you apply the Word, but if you’re going to twist it, you’re not. There are plenty of people out there ready to help you twist the Word. They have figured out ways to twist it so that they can have a god of their own making that lets them do the things they want. (***2Pe.3:15***) ***And account that the longsuffering of our Lord is salvation (16) as also in all [his] epistles, speaking in them of these things; wherein are some things hard to be understood, which the ignorant and unstedfast wrest, as [they do] also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction.*** So understand that when you twist the Scriptures, you’re doing it to your own destruction.

**(2Pe.3:17) Ye therefore, beloved, knowing [these things] beforehand, beware lest, being carried away...** The Greek word there is *ekpipto* and it's variously translated as: "I fall out, fall off, fall away; hence in nautical language: I fall off from the straight course; I fall from, lose, forfeit; I am cast ashore; I am fruitless." **(2Pe.3:17) Ye therefore, beloved, knowing [these things] beforehand, beware lest, being carried away with the error of the wicked, ye fall from your own steadfastness.** Yes, "beware." Fear the Lord and fear to miss Him, and don't fear anything else. **(18) But grow in the grace and knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.** (And, of course, we can "grow in grace" because He said it. Grow in "grace," which is "God's favor." He is for us, He is not against us. As long as we are for Him, He will continue to show us the way through the wilderness.) **To him [be] the glory both now and for ever. Amen.**

**(Rev.18:1): After these things I saw another angel coming down out of heaven, having great authority; and the earth was lightened with his glory. (2) And he cried with a mighty voice, saying, Fallen, fallen is Babylon the great, and is become a habitation of demons...** We ought to be able to see in these days that "Babylon the great" is America. Of course, there is a parable that the whole world is a Babylon, that's true, but if you take America among the nations, it is the Great Babylon that fits the picture better than anything else. And, yes, it is "become a habitation of demons." **(Rev.18:2) And he cried with a mighty voice, saying, Fallen, fallen is Babylon the great, and is become a habitation of demons, and a hold** (This is an archaic word for "prison.") **of every unclean spirit,**

**and a hold of every unclean and hateful bird.** Be careful, because there are many snares out there to trap you.

### *Words Have Spirits*

Be careful whom you listen to. Don't let just anybody spew into your mind and your heart. You wouldn't let the devil in your living room, so don't sit in front of the stupid "tube" and let that vomit into your mind and heart. Don't do that because there are spirits in words. As Jesus said, **(Joh.6:63) *It is the spirit that giveth life; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I have spoken unto you are spirit, and are life. ... (68) Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of eternal life.*** In Jesus' words, it was the Spirit that gave life, but everybody has spirits in their words and those spirits are ready to take advantage of you. Those spirits will rise up when you face temptations or tests, or listen to words to which you should not be listening.

### *Unite with the Saints*

**(Rev.18:3) *For by the wine of the wrath of her fornication all the nations are fallen*** (Yes, that's why God's going to greatly judge America, because it has had the truth and rejected the truth.); ***and the kings of the earth committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth waxed rich by the power of her wantonness.*** There's so much lust in America for so many things, for everything but God. **(4) *And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come forth, my people, out of her, that ye have no fellowship with***

***her sins...*** So this is how you “come ... out of her,” you “have no fellowship with her sins.” The Greek word there for “fellowship” is *sugkoinoneó* meaning, “I am a partaker with, have fellowship with, am an accomplice in.” But if you have understood “come ... out of her” to mean geographically walking out of her, that still won’t save you because you’re taking sin with you. We have to come out of her by not fellowshiping with her sins. ***(Rev.18:4) And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come forth, my people, out of her, that ye have no fellowship with her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.*** Just as they have received the plagues all through history, Christians today are receiving these plagues and being taken out by them, and it’s because they’re having “fellowship with her sins.” ***(2Co.6:17) Wherefore Come ye out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, And touch no unclean thing; And I will receive you, (18) And will be to you a Father, And ye shall be to me sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.*** Amen, thank You, Father.

***(Rev.18:5) For her sins have reached even unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.*** Saints, if I’m sure of anything, I’m sure of this: Though God is having favor in a governmental way for us now, it is going to be only for a short time, and there will be judgments, especially on the apostate church who is having fellowship with Babylon’s sins. Judgment is coming; it’s at the door. ***(Rev.18:6) Render unto her even as she rendered, and double [unto her] the double according to her works...*** The Lord said He would render unto every man according to His works (2 Corinthians 2:11:15; Timothy 4:14; Revelation 2:23; etc.) If you want a good future, you

have to sow a good seed. ***(Gal.6:7) Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap.***

***(Rev.18:6) Render unto her even as she rendered, and double [unto her] the double accord-ing to her works: in the cup which she mingled, mingle unto her double.*** Babylon has brought destruction to the world, but by the grace of God, this Babylonish government is falling to Cyrus. Amen. ***(7) How much soever she glorified herself, and waxed wanton, so much give her of torment and mourning: for she saith in her heart, I sit a queen, and am no widow, and shall in no wise see mourning.*** Yes, Americans do believe that. They have escaped much of what the rest of the world has gone through, but it's not going to last. ***(8) Therefore in one day shall her plagues come, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire; for strong is the Lord God who judged her.*** So, friends, don't unite yourself with America. It's a carnal, pagan, country. You have a new Kingdom. Unite yourselves with the saints and fellowship with them, because if you fellowship with the sins of Babylon, you will fall away and the judgment will be on you.

***(Joh.6:63) It is the spirit that giveth life; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I have spoken unto you are spirit, and are life.*** Again, people have spirits in their words, and all words can be taken advantage of by evil spirits, especially if those words are deceptive, lustful, or contrary to God's Will. Another thing we can say about that is ***(2Co.3:6) ... the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life.*** Many people are deceiving others by manipulating the letter of the Word and ignoring the

Spirit of the Word that's behind the letter. They don't truly want to be united with the Word, which is being united with Christ Who is the Word, and therefore they get deceived themselves. That's why we have to study the Word for ourselves, that's why we have to seek out our own salvation with fear and trembling (Philippians 2:12).

***(Joh.6:64) But there are some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew from the beginning who they were that believed not*** (There are some among us who believe not, too. History just repeats {Ecclesiastes 1:9}.), ***and who it was that should betray him***. Obviously, Judas Iscariot didn't believe enough to repent and turn to the Lord. He was a thief among them. He was full of faction. He was full of rejection. He didn't believe enough to be delivered and it wasn't important enough to him to be delivered, so he sided with the wicked. And, of course, there is a body in the body of Christ today that is like that. The falling away will reveal them. ***(Joh.6:65) And he said, For this cause have I said unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it be given unto him of the Father***. Amen. If you're drawn by the Father to the Son, you are one of the blessed ones. Treasure it. Thank God. Fear God. Obey His Word.

### *Many Went Back*

***(Joh.6:66) Upon this many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him***. It's not an accident that this is verse 6:66. Jesus called them His "disciples" but they came to a point where they weren't willing to go on with Him. Up above this text, it speaks about "eating My body and drinking My blood" (John 6:51-

57) and that was a stumbling block to them (John 6:60-61), but He said, “No, this is a Spirit Word” (John 6:63). Of course, some are not willing to partake of the Life of Christ which has been offered to us. They’ve been called to this, they’ve been invited to partake of all the benefits of the Kingdom, but they like the benefits of the world more, so they turn around and walk away. **(67) *Jesus said therefore unto the twelve, Would ye also go away?*** No, they valued Him, they valued the Word. They valued Him enough to sit and listen and desire the Word. **(68) *Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of eternal life.*** **(69) *And we have believed and know that thou art the Holy One of God.***

**(Joh.6:70) *Jesus answered them, Did not I choose you the twelve, and one of you is a devil?*** The same is true today. Amongst the people of God there is this “devil.” **(71) *Now he spake of Judas [the son] of Simon Iscariot, for he it was that should betray him, [being] one of the twelve. (2Co.11:13) For such men are false apostles, deceitful workers, fashioning themselves into apostles of Christ.*** I remember during the Lakeland Revival how the pastors and a bunch of apostles put forward this one particular man. He was covered with demonic tattoos, tattoos that he had had inked on after he so-called “came to know the Lord,” but they propped him up on television anyway. And they all stood around behind him and glorified him because he was bringing in the people and bringing in the money. Then the very next day after they had glorified him, he was caught in fornication. He made a fool out of those people. They had no spiritual discernment that would have let them recog-

nize his problem, and they ended up being scattered. It's the same today. There are many people that make themselves apostles. Anybody who makes himself an apostle is just like this text here. Their ego has taken them over and they are "false apostles, deceitful workers, fashioning themselves into apostles," and prophets, and pastors, and teachers, and evangelists. We need to have spiritual discernment, which is what studying the Word gives us, because there are many people that have taken every kind of name to themselves, but they were not put there by God.

***(2Co.11:14) And no marvel; for even Satan fashioneth himself into an angel of light.*** Well, of course he doesn't come with his red suit on and carrying his pitchfork and so forth. He comes like "an angel of light." He tries to deceive you into thinking he is God. ***(15) It is no great thing therefore if his ministers also fashion themselves as ministers of righteousness*** (Notice that Satan's ministers are seen as "ministers of righteousness," but their works deny the Lord.); ***whose end shall be according to their works.*** Yes, they ultimately get found out, but by the time that the world recognizes them, it's too late. By then, people are blaming Christianity for whatever these deceivers did, and that brings a bad name on Christianity.

We shouldn't be as ignorant as the world is (Matthew 7:15,24:11,24). We should recognize people by their works. This is how Jesus said you would know them, by their love. ***(Joh.13:35) By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.*** We should be "fruit" inspectors. ***(Mat.7:15) Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly are ravening wolves. (16) By their fruits***

***ye shall know them. Do [men] gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? (17) Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but the corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. (18) A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. (19) Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. (20) Therefore by their fruits ye shall know them.*** If a person is an “elder,” that means he is older in the Lord. That means he walks more in the Steps of Jesus. ***(1Jn.2:5) But whoso keepeth his word, in him verily hath the love of God been perfected. Hereby we know that we are in him: (6) he that saith he abideth in him ought himself also to walk even as he walked.***

***(Mat.10:32): Every one therefore who shall confess me before men, him will I also confess before my Father who is in heaven.*** “Confess” is the Greek *homologeó* and it means “to speak the same as, to speak the same thing, i.e. ‘assent, agree with, confess, declare, admit.’” Of course, “to speak the same as,” is “to say what God says; to be an oracle of God,” as we’re commanded (1 Peter 4:11). We’re commanded to say what He says and to not add to, or take away from, His Words. That’s what the last verses in the Bible warn against (Revelation 22:18-19). God will confess us if we will agree with Him. If we agree with what He says about us, agree with the benefits He says He’s given us, He will confess us before the Father. ***(Mat.10:33) But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father who is in heaven.*** He is the High Priest of our confession (Hebrews 3:1). He is looking for an offering, and that offer-

ing is our confession, but it needs to be a confession that involves a crucifixion of the flesh and building up of the new man, otherwise, it's not good enough. The flesh needs to be crucified for the spiritual man to be released and the promises of God to be received.

### *A Sword of Division*

**(Mat.10:34) Think not that I came to send peace on the earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword.** Yes, He wants division. He wants to divide between those who are His true disciples and those who are “leaven” in the body, because they would leaven the whole lump if they weren't separated. **(35) For I came to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother** (It's Truth against error. It's holiness against unsanctification.), **and the daughter in law against her mother in law: (36) and a man's foes [shall be] they of his own household.** Yes, they are from a different Kingdom, and if you are not willing to leave them behind and follow the Lord, your prayers for them won't be heard by the Lord. You must first follow the Lord if you want them to be saved and delivered, but until that comes to pass, you know that they're enemies of the Cross of Christ because they try to talk you out of it every way they can.

**(Mat.10:37) He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me** (Amen. We must follow Him.); **and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me.** If you make an idol out of someone who is leaven and you serve them, you will not be serving the Lord for their spirit was not born

from above. Unless you are born from above in spirit and soul (John 3:3-8), you'll be no benefit to them. The best thing to do is get out of that situation, follow the Lord, and let the "chips fall where they may." If they disagree, oh well, you're following the Lord. If you follow the Lord enough so that you're manifesting Him in your spirit and soul, then your prayers for them will be answered. In the meanwhile, they are a test. **(Mat.10:38) *And he that doth not take his cross and follow after me, is not worthy of me. (39) He that findeth his life*** (This is the Greek word *psuché* meaning "the human soul, the self.") ***shall lose it; and he that loseth his life*** (This is *psuché* again.) ***for my sake shall find it. (40) He that receiveth you receiveth me, and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.*** Praise God!

**(Jas.5:19) *My brethren, if any among you err from the truth, and one convert him; (20) let him know, that he who converteth a sinner from the error of his way shall save a soul from death, and shall cover a multitude of sins.*** We need to stand ready, but we don't want to be quick to judge; we want to be quick to share the Gospel, the Good News, which is the mercy of God. We need to be in readiness to avenge all disobedience when our obedience is made full (2 Corinthians 10:6). **(Gal.6:1) *Brethren, even if a man be overtaken in any trespass, ye who are spiritual, restore such a one in a spirit of gentleness; looking to thyself, lest thou also be tempted.*** Don't go where you're not sent, because you might fall into their same error, but when you convert somebody from the error of his way, you're saving a soul from death. Of course, those people who believe the lying "once-saved, always-saved" doctrine think, "It's not

a big deal. They're all going to be saved because they're all saved." No, "he who converteth a sinner from the error of his way shall save a soul from death, and shall cover a multitude of sins" because when they are saved, their sins are forgiven. They are covered by the Blood.

***(Gal.6:1) Brethren, even if a man be overtaken in any trespass, ye who are spiritual, restore such a one in a spirit of gentleness; looking to thyself, lest thou also be tempted.*** This is very true. Some people go out to save others and they lose themselves, and that's a tragedy. God is not going to send you where you're not prepared to be of help, and that's why he said, "ye who are spiritual, restore such a one." ***(Gal.6:2) Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfil the law of Christ.***

Yes, many of our brethren are burdened down with sin. They need exhortation, they need faith, they need conviction, and at the same time, they need somebody to help them along the way while they're going through this test. Do I say to get mixed up with someone who is in outward immorality? No, I don't teach that at all, nor do I believe in that, but as much as you can exhort and lift up and give faith to someone, that's a good thing.

***(Gal.6:3) For if a man thinketh himself to be something when he is nothing*** (This includes the first statement he gave there, "ye who are spiritual, restore such a one."), ***he deceiveth himself.*** There are many people who deceive themselves. It's easy to think you're great until you find out what sin is. It's easy to think you're great unless you're going to study the Scriptures with an eye to walk in the Steps of the Master. It's called "discipleship." ***(Gal.6:4) But let each man prove his own work, and then shall he have his glorying in regard of***

***himself alone, and not of his neighbor.*** It's just as Jesus said, ***(Mat.7:3) And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye? (4) Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me cast out the mote out of thine eye; and lo, the beam is in thine own eye? (5) Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brother's eye.***

### *Reaping What is Sown*

How foolish to think you can give someone something that you don't have! We need Jesus in us if we're going to be prepared to help the people around us. He's the One Who helps them. He is the Word. And if we come into alignment with the Word, we'll be prepared to help others, not only with our faith, but also with exhortations of the Word, promises of the Word, and so on. ***(Gal.6:5) For each man shall bear his own burden. (6) But let him that is taught in the word communicate unto him that teacheth in all good things.*** Amen. We love to pass around our revelations of the Word; they're exciting and they cause people to grow up.

***(Gal.6:7) Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap.*** God is saying that you make your own future, so what are you going to reap? What you have sown. Why do we have the Scriptures? We have the Scriptures for us to learn that the cutting-off of the flesh enables us to sow the true Seed of the Word of God. Sowing a good seed is a mat-

ter of being obedient to Scripture because you walk by faith in Jesus Christ, in the Sacrifice. **(8) For he that soweth unto his own flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption** (Yes, anything you do to build-up the old man is going to cause you to reap corruption; you are making a bad future.); **but he that soweth unto the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap eternal life.** Build up your spirit man. Build him up with the Word of God. His food is the Word of God, it's the Body and Blood of Christ. Since the life of the flesh is in the blood (Leviticus 17:11,14; Deuteronomy 12:23; John 6:53-54), the Life of Christ is in His Blood.

**(Gal.6:9) And let us not be weary in well-doing: for in due season we shall reap...** Some people do get weary. In fact, some people become offended when other people do bad things or they don't agree with them or whatever. They get offended and get angry and they give it up. There are many people who give up their ministry in the Lord because of that, but He said, "in due season we shall reap." **(Gal.6:9) And let us not be weary in well-doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not. (Gal.6:10) So then, as we have opportunity, let us work that which is good toward all men** (Don't expect anything from them and you won't be disappointed. Just expect that you're doing the Will of God and that He is going to reward you, even if they do not.), **and especially toward them that are of the household of the faith.** Amen. Those are the people we know will be blessed.

**(Jer.3:12) Go, and proclaim these words toward the north, and say, Return, thou backsliding Israel, saith the Lord...** This reminds me of Ezekiel prophesying to the dry bones, raising up this great army out of dry

bones (Ezekiel 37:1-14). They were dead in their sins but the Lord had mercy on them. You, too, can also prophesy toward the backslidden, the fallen. You can speak faith for them. **(Jer.3:12) Go, and proclaim these words toward the north, and say, Return** (This is the Hebrew word *shub* and it is also translated “repent.”), ***thou backsliding*** (This is the Hebrew *meshubah* derived from *shub* and it means “turning back, apostasy, faithlessness, waywardness.”) ***Israel, saith the Lord; I will not look in anger upon you; for I am merciful, saith the Lord*** (The Lord will not be angry with you if you will repent.), ***I will not keep [anger] for ever. (Jer.3:13) Only acknowledge thine iniquity...*** This is a big thing for some people. They are practiced in hiding their iniquity among the brethren, but the Lord will not permit it because a little leaven leavens the whole lump (1 Corinthians 5:6; Galatians 5:9). Of course, when you reveal their iniquity, which, for instance, the Holy Spirit has shown you, they get angry and flee because they wanted to hide it. That’s just one way that God cleans the church, especially with rejection.

Rejection and fear of rejection both cause people to hide things, but you’ve been told, **(Jer.3:13) Only acknowledge thine iniquity, that thou hast transgressed against the Lord thy God, and hast scattered thy ways to the strangers under every green tree, and ye have not obeyed my voice, saith the Lord.** You need to confess your sins. **(1Jn.1:6) If we say that we have fellowship with him and walk in the darkness, we lie, and do not the truth: (7) but if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus his Son cleanseth us from all sin. (8) If we say**

**that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. (9) If we confess our sins, he is faithful and righteous to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. (10) If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.** You need to bring your sins into the light so the Lord can cleanse you.

**(Jer.3:14) Return, O backsliding children, saith the Lord; for I am a husband unto you: and I will take you one of a city, and two of a family, and I will bring you to Zion.** That's the Bride, and this is the **(Php.3:14) ... prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.** It's the Presence of the Lord. The Presence of the Lord is in Zion, which is Jerusalem, which is the Bride, as John was told (Revelation 3:12,21:2). We want to have the Presence of the Lord. **(Jer.3:15) And I will give you shepherds according to my heart...** If you want the truth, if you love the truth, He will do this. If you ask Him to lead you to the truth because you honestly desire it, He will do this until you decide that you don't want any more of the truth. And if that happens, then you, too, will be gone.

**(Jer.3:15) And I will give you shepherds according to my heart, who shall feed you with knowledge and understanding. (16) And it shall come to pass, when ye are multiplied and increased in the land, in those days, saith the Lord, they shall say no more, The ark of the covenant of the Lord** (The Ark was just a box that represented the Presence of the Lord in the midst of His people, in the midst of His temple, but His people are not going to be seeking the box anymore because His people are the temple; we are the temple.);

***neither shall it come to mind; neither shall they remember it; neither shall they miss it; neither shall it be made any more.*** Why? Because now the true fulfillment of the parable has come.

***(Jer.3:17) At that time they shall call Jerusalem the throne of the Lord...*** Spiritual Jerusalem, the Bride, is the throne of the Lord, not physical, natural Jerusalem over there in the Middle East. Natural Jerusalem is fallen and mostly pagan, full of people who have false teachings and a Covenant that does not exist anymore. Natural Jerusalem is not the New Jerusalem that's born from above (Revelation 3:12,21:2). We are of the New Jerusalem, Paul said (Hebrews 12:18-24).

***(Jer.3:17) At that time they shall call Jerusalem the throne of the Lord; and all the nations shall be gathered unto it...*** Yes, the Bride is made up of all nations, and those that will submit to the Bride are made up of all nations. ***(Jer.3:17) At that time they shall call Jerusalem the throne of the Lord; and all the nations shall be gathered unto it, to the name of the Lord, to Jerusalem...*** Notice that "Jerusalem" is the "name" of the Lord, which is the "nature, character, and authority" of the Lord. A friend of mine was told by the Lord, "I am Zion." Amen! So now you see again what the prize is; it's the "prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus" (Philippians 3:14). ***(Jer.3:17) At that time they shall call Jerusalem the throne of the Lord; and all the nations shall be gathered unto it, to the name of the Lord, to Jerusalem: neither shall they walk any more after the stubbornness of their evil heart.*** Oh, praise God!

***(Jer.3:18) In those days the house of Judah***

***shall walk with the house of Israel*** (In other words, the body of Christ is no more divided between the Spirit-filled, which is Judah, and the non-spirit-filled, which is Israel, who went after their golden calf {Exodus 32:4}.), ***and they shall come together out of the land of the north to the land that I gave for an inheritance unto your fathers.*** They're going to dwell on the Promised Land (Exodus 12:25; Deuteronomy 19:8,31:20; Hebrews 11:9; etc.), they're going to stand on the promises of God. ***(19) But I said, How I will put thee among the children, and give thee a pleasant land, a goodly heritage of the hosts of the nations! and I said, Ye shall call me My Father, and shall not turn away from following me.*** Notice that we are to call Him "my Father" and not any of the Jewish holy names. Those are not in the New Covenant and those are not what Jesus spoke. What did He call Him? Father. We're to call Him, "my Father." It's a more personal name than all those names that the religions think are holy and necessary. We should pay attention to what Jesus and His disciples did, because God was so fed-up with the apostasy of the Jews that He wrote the New Testament in a different language. Why, then, would you go back and glorify the people that failed? Yes, there are good things that Jews can show us, but don't get caught up in their legalism.

***(Jer.3:20) Surely as a wife treacherously departed from her husband, so have ye dealt treacherously with me, O house of Israel, saith the Lord.*** This is true, and Israel is just a parable of the church. The church has totally departed from the Word of God. It does not represent what happened back there, or the eternal Covenant that was given back there (Hebrews

13:20), nor what the disciples who followed Jesus or the apostles who followed Jesus passed on to us. The religions like to pick and choose what tickles their ears. **(2Ti.4:3) For the time will come when they will not endure the sound doctrine; but, having itching ears, will heap to themselves teachers after their own lusts.**

*Return, Ye Backsliding Children*

**(Jer.3:21) A voice is heard upon the bare heights, the weeping [and] the supplications of the children of Israel; because they have perverted their way (Yes, they have, and the church has, too.), they have forgotten the Lord their God. They found out that they like glorifying men and denominations and so on, which is a work of the flesh, according to Paul (Galatians 5:19-20). **(22) Return, ye backsliding children, I will heal your backslidings. Behold, we are come unto thee; for thou art the Lord our God. (23) Truly in vain is [the help that is looked for] from the hills, the tumult on the mountains: truly in the Lord our God is the salvation of Israel. Salvation is abiding in the Lord our God. Don't look for the help of man and don't trust in the help of man, because **(Jer.17:5) Thus saith the Lord: Cursed is the man that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the Lord. You don't need any of that. You have the Savior, the Creator.******

**(Jer.3:24) But the shameful thing hath devoured the labor of our fathers from our youth, their flocks and their herds, their sons and their daughters.** If you are backslidden or fallen away from the

original Covenant and the words that were given unto us, you're just going to pass this falling away on to your children and they, too, will be trapped. Do what you need to do to return to the Lord. "Return, ye backsliding children," and "I will heal your backslidings." (**Jer.3:25**) ***Let us lie down in our shame, and let our confusion cover us; for we have sinned against the Lord our God, we and our fathers, from our youth even unto this day; and we have not obeyed the voice of the Lord our God.*** You must find out the truth. You must pick up the Bible.

I had a great advantage. I was raised in a religion that didn't believe in studying the Bible or teaching the Bible, so when I picked up the Bible, I didn't really have any background that came against it. My religion was just a lot of ceremony and fluff, and when I started reading the Bible, I was amazed at what I hadn't been told. And I didn't have anybody to tell me that "this" was no good, and "that" was no good, and "this and that" is passed away, and on and on. I didn't have any of that, so I just accepted what I read. It was a great advantage that I didn't have a lot of teaching and doctrines in me that were against the Bible, since my "church" basically wasn't a church. Go and read your Word. You don't want to pass things on to your children that are not of God, but merely the traditions of men (Mark 7:8), because you'll just destroy them, too.

### *The House of Sacrifice and Being in the Bride*

***(2Ch.7:12) And the Lord appeared to Solomon by night, and said unto him, I have heard thy prayer, and have chosen this place to myself for a house of***

**sacrifice.** If you're going to be in the Bride, it is going to be a "house of sacrifice." You must sacrifice your old life to be there, but you will be in the Presence of God because He dwells in the midst of Zion (Psalm 9:11,135:21; Joel 3:21; etc.), and the Word shall go forth from Zion (Isaiah 2:3; Micah 4:2.) **(2Ch.7:13) If I shut up the heavens so that there is no rain, or if I command the locust to devour the land, or if I send pestilence among my people** (This is going to happen.); **(14) if my people, who are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land.** Now, of course, there are two lands. There is the physical land that we dwell in but that we're not really a part of, and in my case, it is the United States. But also, there is the "land" that is this life we live in, this physical life that was created from the dust of the earth (Hebrews 6:4-8). **(Heb.6:7) For the land which hath drunk the rain that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them for whose sake it is also tilled, receiveth blessing from God.** The Lord will give us this "land."

**(2Ch.7:15) Now mine eyes shall be open, and mine ears attent, unto the prayer that is made in this place.** Yes, He hears the prayers. Esther had the ear of the King. She represented Zion, the Bride. He heard her prayers. He saved God's people. **(2Ch.7:16) For now have I chosen and hallowed this house, that my name may be there for ever; and mine eyes and my heart shall be there perpetually.** Yes, be one of those people in whom Jesus dwells to His fullest. **(17) And as for thee, if thou wilt walk before me as David**

***thy father walked, and do according to all that I have commanded thee, and wilt keep my statutes and mine ordinances; (18) then I will establish the throne of thy kingdom , according as I covenanted with David thy father, saying, There shall not fail thee a man to be ruler in Israel. The Lord says, (Rev.2:26) And he that overcometh, and he that keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give authority over the nations. Hallelujah!***

Father, we just ask that You teach us Your ways, that You deliver us from evil that we not stumble and be among them that are of the falling-away because they are ignorant of the Word, ignorant of Your benefits, ignorant of Your desire to help us, ignorant of faith and the way that we receive Your benefits. Lord, help us and give us grace. Send a revival, Lord. Save multitudes who do not deserve Your kindness and Your goodness. We do not deserve what You're doing in this country, overthrowing a beast government that was out to destroy us before its time. Thank You, Father, in the Name of Jesus, for Your goodness to us. We love You, Father. Help us! Draw us unto Yourself. Amen.



[www.ubmbooks.com](http://www.ubmbooks.com)

- ***Sovereign God For Us and Through Us*** by David Eells
- ***The Real Good News*** by David Eells
- ***Hidden Manna For the End Times*** by David Eells
- ***The Man-child and Bride Prophecy*** by David Eells
- ***Perfection Through Christ*** by David Eells
- ***How Shall We Die?*** by David Eells
- ***Destructive Demon Doctrines*** by David Eells
- ***The Tongue Conquers the Curse*** by David Eells
- ***Are You Following a Wolf?*** by David Eells
- ***Speak Grace, Not Condemnation*** by David Eells
- ***What Has Been Shall Be: The Man-child Returns*** by David Eells
- ***The Curse of Unforgiveness*** by David Eells
- ***Weakness, the Way to God's Power*** by David Eells
- ***Salvation: Instant and Progressive*** by David Eells
- ***Numeric English New Testament*** by Ivan Panin and UBM
- ***Beloved Spiritual Israel*** by David Eells
- ***Fear Not the Wilderness*** by David Eells
- ***Jesus Will Shepherd His Flock*** by David Eells
- ***Predestined, Called and Elect*** by David Eells
- ***Sanctification Before Blessing*** by David Eells
- ***Delivered From Dark Powers*** by David Eells
- ***Fear Not The Wilderness*** by David Eells
- ***God's Vaccine*** by David Eells
- ***Escape The Falling Away*** by David Eells
- ***The Word, Women and Authority*** by David Eells
- ***The Truth About Born Again*** by David Eells
- ***Saving Our Families by Faith*** by David Eells
- ***Grace to Walk in the Word*** by David Eells

Audio/Video Teachings Available For Free at [www.ubm1.org](http://www.ubm1.org)

